

# THE HISTORY OF SAMUEL WARREN SHAFFER

Written and Compiled By Hans Woodman and K.F. Nickel

Dedicated to William C. Stuart, a friend on many adventures

Copyright 2007 by Hans Woodman and K. F. Nickel All rights reserved. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles or reviews. Published 2007.

## Chapter Headings: Act 1

Chapter 1 – A prophetic childhood

Chapter 2 – Into the deserts

Chapter 3 – Good or Evil

Chapter 4 – The Green Candle

Chapter 5 – It Begins

Chapter 6 – The Meta

Chapter 7 – The Machine

Chapter 8 – The Titans

Chapter 9 – The Altimate Adventure

## Chapter Headings: Act 2

Chapter 10 – My Mission

Chapter 11 – Wing Chun

Chapter 12 – Getting Married

Chapter 13 – Prelude to the Work

Chapter 14 – Finding the Lords Anointed

Chapter 15 – Who Will Believe

Chapter 16 – The Kingdom Rolls On

Chapter 17 – A Day of Revelation

Chapter 18 – Pentecost A Feast of the Spirit

### Chapter Headings: Act 3

Chapter 19 – The Cleansing, from Pentecost to Tabernacles

Chapter 20 – An increase in Light and Knowledge

Chapter 21 – Self Restoration

Chapter 22 – Second Anointing

Chapter 23 – Sannhedanism

Chapter 24 – My Encounter with the Titans

## Chapter 1

### A prophetic childhood

My mother knew I was a boy before I came and said she already knew many things about me. Some of which she has told me over the years.

I was Born on Beatty street, in San Leandro CA. I had two older brothers named Adam and Ben. My family soon moved to Paradise California. My Mom and Dad noticed right away that I had some kind of muscular problem because I couldn't do the same things other babies could, in fact they would often take toys away from me.

Our house in Paradise was in the forest. It was yellow and had a good amount of land for a yard. It was warmed with a wood burning stove and had a giant mirror in the living room. Also a large window adjacent from them. The front door was in the kitchen. It was a large kitchen with many cupboards and a fan in the wall, also a window looking into the backyard

over the sink. It had a big back porch hugged on three sides by the house that resembled a U. It had a nice back yard with a chicken coop and many trees. This was the home of my childhood.

I was in my crib when my brother Joseph was born.

At that time I first saw the dream of the house under the tree. In the dream I could walk, I was also tall and was wearing strange green clothes. I walked through a giant forest. The forest was almost dead looking with a lot of grey vines. I finally came to a house and chopped my way to the door with a blade I found on my side. I went in and found no one. After the dream I awoke and didn't cry.

Dad came in and picked me up out of the crib and brought me to see my baby brother. That was a time I never forgot, the strange thing is that I had the same dream many more times growing up, each time the forest grew greener. Once there was an old lady there that told me many marvelous things. She said I would start an organization that would change the world. Each time I had the dream after words she was there and each time grew younger.

"This time I saw a house under a great tree with nine main branches. The door under two of its massive roots opened and an old lady invited me in."

"She took me in her arms like I was a long lost child and sat me in a chair. Light poured through a window and onto a table in front of me.

"Is this my home?" I asked. And she said.

"No, your home is inside you.

"Inside me?"

"Or in other words your memory is not lost forever, but only for a time as a probation. As you follow the path of truth you will be guided home by your heart."

"Path of truth?" I inquired again.

"Yes, this place you are in is only one of millions. Worlds go on and on forever, and you may make it to any one of these places you wish, as long as you fight the currant the leads you to darkness.

"Currant?" I asked.

"Yes, there will be a tendency to leave the right path and go further in to the caves. This is inspired by the liar. It is like a currant that pulls you and you must fight it. It is perpetuated by

him and his host as well as wagging tongues of the ignorant. Never let your eye waver from the goal but always fight this currant and your heart will lead you to the light."

"Teach me more about the light," I pleaded.

"I would be delighted," she said.

She went on to tell me many wonderful things, all of which I cannot recount for I hold them sacred. She told me I was to restore the true Order of the Aryans. She told me many secrets about space and time. She also explained where I came from, where I was going and why I was on this earth. She also said the sun was the grand conduit to the higher worlds and that fire was sacred. She told me the most wonderful things about the outside world and even showed unto me flowers and trees in here garden. She told me the planets where filled with darkness and had negative forces upon the earth.

This is just a small sample of what she told me, most of which I cannot repeat."

One night in my crib I looked out the window to see an orb of light flying past. I wondered if it was the start of another vision. I cannot remember exactly why I thought this, perhaps visions came in those days, beyond just my dreams.

Grandpa Woodman came to visit after that from North Carolina. I remember being in the front yard when he visited and seeing my first recollection of a squirrel. We played with a ball even though I wasn't able to throw very well. I used the ball to steady myself and than I would kick it falling back down. That evening everyone sat around and made ice cream on the back porch. Those where memorable days, but soon they left for north Carolina again.

My mother related one experience that showed my early ingenuity. She said that one day she was talking to a friend by the garden and I was there by her. I tugged a few times at her but she ignored me, so I made my way to the head of broccoli. I pulled and pulled and with no avail I came up with a new strategy. I simply bent over and bit off the top, leaving the stem in the ground.

I remember many family nights together where we were told many things I know are true and have never forgotten. I remember being on my mother's lap and learning where I came from and about the mysteries of the universe from that amazing woman, and my father also. She told me how I volunteered in the courts above to have my muscle disorder before I was born.

One such family night my father told us how to recognize a true angel of light from a false spirit. I remember knowing at that time that my father had seen an angel, or that he knew one of us would.

One day I got an ear infection. They gave me antibiotics and I contracted ITP. It is a blood disease where your immune system kills your white platelets. Although no one knew it yet.

In those days I was just first walking without the aid of the wall, when I was about four, and would fall over very easily. I remember making it along the wall and to the piano for support. I would literally lean in the direction I wanted to go and probably looked very clumsy.

Quote from: "Profile of Hans Woodman"

"We lived in the woods, had a wood burning stove and no hot water. A big yard surrounded our house and the forest beyond enchanted our minds with many stories.

I was born with a muscle disorder and didn't walk until I was three or four, even after that time I was wobbly and used the wall for support. On top of that I contracted a blood disease from an allergic reaction of injected Antibiotics. my immune system began attacking my white platelets, because of this I could bleed to death from the slightest injury. So I spent my days inside or sitting on the porch for years.

I am actually grateful for this childhood because it refined my mind and attitude about life. It also gave me a chance to develop my art and imagination.

One night I heard a whisper coming from the fire place. It told me in some strange language that he was a dead squirrel stuck in the chimney. The next day I told my dad about the dead squirrel and dad went up on the roof and fished it out.

Another night I had a dream where I was looking down at my own body lying in my bed. I saw the problem in it but didn't know how to describe it. I decided I shouldn't tell anyone about this dream and haven't but once until now.

Me and Joe liked to play with a mentally challenged girl down the street. We also went down to the stream to get black berries. I started having tons of nose bleeds so my parents took me to the doctor, I didn't really like the idea of going to the doctor, I was afraid he might tell my parents I had been out of my body. He told them I had ITP. I stayed in most of the time drawing anyway. I couldn't play with the others at first because I couldn't walk but now I was still clumsy and had a blood disease that would kill me if I bumped my head too hard.

Warming up by the fire place in the winter was some of my fondest memories. I always loved fire and felt a connection to it. I also loved watching my father gathering wood and lighting it and later in my life helping him get it.

I started drawing a world on yellow pieces of paper my dad got from the Masonic Temple. As I drew I would see visions of places than draw them. I told my mother what I was drawing was a real world.

One day I made it to the forest behind my yard. I found a ring of trees that was most magical and a mushroomy log bridge.

I started telling my mother the story of Enthnar who was a person in the world. Mother was impressed at the quality of the story. One day mother asked me, "Didn't Enthnar ever do anything wrong? Because no one is perfect." Than I said, "He is perfect, because he is the Savior of that world." My mother than said "oh."

One day she saw me drawing a world map on a roll of paper. She said that I reminded her of her Uncle Scotlund L. Moore, who also drew maps of other worlds.

One night I was laying on the end of my bed with one arm over the side. Suddenly I knew I would never see Grandpa Woodman again in this life, he was about to get in a terrible accident and would be injured enough that he wouldn't visit, than he would die. I knew it was true and started crying. I cried so much my tears started making a puddle on the floor. My nose was running as well, than the tears were suddenly accompanied with drops of blood until there was blood all over the floor. I didn't seem to care though. The silent voice came again and told me to go to the bathroom, and try and stop my nose bleed or I would die also. So I got up and went to the bathroom. But I couldn't seem to stop the bleeding. I went to my mom and dad's room and woke them up. They were horrified when they saw the puddle of blood and the trash can full of red soaked tissues. They gave me a towel to put on my face and called Brother Powell. He came right away. They gave me a blessing and rushed me to the hospital in Brother Powel's truck. In the blessing I was told not to grieve over loved ones but that I would see them again. The only one who understood that part was me.

When we got to the hospital they put a huge bandage on my nose. The doctor said to my parents that according to a blood sample that I should be dead from a lack of white platelets. They took me home the next day and everyone was very careful with me. I didn't like the attention, it kind of frustrated me.

In three days we went back to the doctor who took the bandage off. He said I needed to have a weekly blood test so this wouldn't happen again.

My Sister Anni was born a little before this time actually and I watched it happen, it was amazing! And we had donuts and milk.

I got blood tests every week to see how I was doing. My arm still bears the scars from countless needles. I received candy whenever I got blood tests. My brothers thought it wasn't fair and I actually agreed with them, and felt kind of bad. The doctors tried a new method. They taught me self hypnosis, to see if I could tell my immune system to stop. I did so, and to their astonishment it really seemed to help. Yet the problem was still there.

I loved to go on walks to the lookout down the street. Especially when the valley was filled with clouds. The hills would look like Islands in the sky.

We had a big yard and I was going out every day now in spite of my disease, we had a huge rope swing lots of trees and some forts. I was going to school now and had to wear a bike helmet to school so I wouldn't bump my head. Some of the kids thought it was funny but some simply assumed I rode my bike to school, save those on the bus.

One day I fell out of the tree right by the rope swing and shattered my arm. I got up and my mother came running out, she was almost crazy because of my disease. The X-rays didn't work because there were too many ruptured blood vessels. They put it in a cast non the less and it healed eventually. It took many many weeks and when it was finally healed my arm was almost atrophied. I had to hold my arm just to lift it, but the strength returned in time. It is now my strongest arm.

One year there was a really bad snow storm that lasted for three days. We got to stay home and make snow men and slushies. We also came in to worm up on the hearth every so often.

A couple times a year we would go to Grandma Singer's house. She had the most mysterious house. in the basement she had all these strange statues and faces. Me and my brother Ben had dreams on several occasions about secret chambers and passages down there. Some of which were kind of scary.

One such dream we both had. I walked down into her basement, There on the far side of the room stood a bar with a glass show case. Inside were many statues, the largest of which was a golden king with four weapons. A mace, a shield, a sword and a hatchet. I walked around the left side of the bar. There hung a bottle opener that resembled a clown with four eyes. On the shelf behind it there were many strange bottles with corks, some of which had skulls and cross bones upon them. Suddenly there was a strange portal in the wall under the shelf. I entered. The passage was dark and gloomy. I looked up and saw a statue of the Egyptian god Anubis. Or was it a statue? The head like a Jackal suddenly moved and looked down at me. Than it somehow extended directly at me and I woke up.

In another dream I found myself in the same basement again. I opened the door next to the old phone. It led to under the stairs where a door knob collection covered the wall. I reached up and turned a green crystal looking one. A secret passage opened up to some sort of medieval elevator. I somehow had found, and had the same sort of weapons wielded by the statue of the golden king. I pulled and pulled on the rope hoisting myself up to the next level. I had a strong body as my residual self image often was. I came to a hall and fought strange gargoyle like creatures that were guardians of some kind. I fought my way through this strange palace until I came to large wooden double doors.

I opened the doors and looked over a long table in a dining hall. Sitting at the end of the table was the most awful and strange creature. It had a spiral of flesh for a head like a cinnamon roll of skin, and a single ear in the center. My heart was pounding this was my enemy. I charged and fought and killed. After I had defeated my foe I left the palace into a sandy desert. In the desert I fought a giant spider. I then came to the forest and the house under the tree. The lady was not there yet though.

I got a reputation on the playground as a prophet, don't ask me how it happened because I don't remember. When people asked me about my bike helmet I wore everywhere, I just said, "it gives me magic powers." One day I met a kid who said he was a warlock who would make pinecone circles. We become rivals yet we would talk every day. The Warlock made a prophesy of death on me. He said, "You shall be cast into the sun and be shriveled into a small ball. You shall than be swallowed by the terrible wolf who shall eat the sun, and bloody horns shall adorn your grave. Now you make a prophesy if you are a prophet." I than said, "In three days from this time, a third of the sun shall be darkened. And by this you may know your powers come from that third that was cast out from heaven and I shall be healed and wear this helmet no more."

I was kind of worried about my being healed so I went to my father and asked for a blessing. I knew the power of the priesthood was real. I had been taught that while giving blessings priesthood holders were acting for God. I had faith that if touched by God I would be healed, like the woman who reached for the hem of Christ's garment. I didn't tell him what it was about or about my prophesy, I just said "please give me a blessing." He gave me a blessing of healing and I felt at peace. In three days my prediction was fulfilled by a partial eclipse of the sun and I no longer had ITP.

Later that year I was taken to the hospital to have an operation, in order to find out what precisely was wrong with my muscles, since they couldn't operate before in relation to my blood disorder, but now since I was better they decided to do the procedure. They had to cut a muscle deep out of my leg. I am allergic to general Anesthetic so they attempted to use Novocain, but it ran out almost immediately, so I just held onto my father's arm. The doctor



asked "Dose it hurt?" I nodded my head. So they injected another painful shot. As I look back on it, it was an amazing experience. Afterwards we went to an awesome restaurant called Luigi's. I can still see the scar on my thigh to this day.

One day I was on the playground and suddenly I was pushed over, So I turned around and gave the person behind me a knuckle sandwich. I looked up to see my good friend Bobby with blood trickling out of his nose. I felt so horrible about it, but Bobby being a true friend didn't tell the playground lady and even hid it from her as we went back inside. I told him I was so sorry and he told me it was alright. After that Bobby and I had many amazing adventures.

Bobby became a good friend, It was him and his brother who first introduced story games to me. I remember us fighting a giant and somehow gaining the power to turn into animals. We snuck into an evil castle and found some great treasure.

My brother Danny was finally born, making six children, eight in all. He was the fastest in coming and barely made it to the hospital. His birth was truly the dawn of an exciting age.

My brothers and I made forts in the back yard and had pine cone wars. One day I climbed the fence again and made my way into the forest. I was following my two older brothers, Adam and Ben, who had went back there. when they saw me coming they ran and I ran after them. In the chase I fell into a patch of poison oak. I told my mom about it and she was really worried, but nothing ever happened. So I figured I wasn't allergic to it.

After I had fallen into the poison oak and lost my brothers I walked back into the magical clearing I have already mentioned. It was after the dark tangled leaning trees. A circle of great pines like a grove. Sunlight poured into the center and all was green and quiet. It was a sacred place to me and I named it after the order the lady told me about.

This is but the beginning of the Hans story. Perhaps contained within its pages is the secret of why I am so believing, and why I am as I am, so bizarre to others, yet normal to myself. I always thought those ignorant of such things must be nothings in thought and being. Who simply do whatever they do and only watch to see what they believe not deciding themselves.

## Chapter 2

### Into the deserts

Some people moved in next door. It was an Indian family, and their son was named Taza. They had a Native American store a few miles away. I became good friends with their son and we would play often. His father was quit wise and taught me several valuable lessons.

We would go to their powwows sometimes and he and my dad were good friends as well. Taza and I would play with muscle men and other things. Most of our time was spent outside though.

It was in relation to Taza's family that Adam found his seer stone which tale we shall not tell at this time.

I continued drawing my maps and other things, I could play outside like other kids now but I didn't stop my artistic career, I loved it too much now. The act of creation was not only fun but exalting somehow. I knew my purpose on the earth was one of creation.

When I was finally eight years of age my father baptized me.

Two years later my parents decided to move to Utah. I loved the idea of going somewhere new and seeing the world but my brother Ben didn't. He believed that Paradise was heaven on earth.

The day before we moved some guys were trying to fix a leak, but instead hit a water vein and sent an artificial rainstorm all over our yard that spring day. And the guy buying the house caught it all on video tape. We finally moved out and said good bye to our old house. We had lived there for eight and a half years. This may not seem like much, but for me that had been my entire life save a few forgotten months. This was the first time I realized that my home was not on earth. We lived in the mansion of some friends in the ward for about a week before embarking to Utah. I say mansion and that is what it was! It took us days to explore the whole thing. Not to mention the miles of forest they owned. It was fun, but as the day came around we packed our bags and headed out.

April 8th. We headed past the feather river where our father had taken us fishing and camping, and then over the Sierra Nevada mountains and into the land beyond. As we headed down into the deserts of Nevada, I was enchanted with wonder. My brother Ben however was moaning about how he liked the forest better the whole time. We stopped for the night and my sister Anni had her fifth birthday in the motor home.

We came to the house where we were going to rent in a town called Spring Glen, but we all had a bad feeling about it so we went elsewhere.

We moved to Price first, to a house on South Carbon avenue. It had a cool secret room behind the garage and an apple tree. It also had a pear and a cherry tree. It was a fun place, and when we left it was not our last experience with it, of which you will hear later on. After a few months we moved to a house in the town of Columbia. My father bought the house in Columbia along with an Indian jewelry store in price. For quite some time my dad would

commute into Price to sell Indian jewelry. It was a cool shop and had lots of cool rings and things.

Columbia was a small town which was only about five by three blocks. The whole town rested upon an incline against the mountain to the east. The mountain towered over the town with huge cliffs above. It was not a lonely mountain though. It was part of a range that curved around slightly and surrounded us. There were also foothills all around, one of which we called Scout Mountain to the south. Before the very large hill sloped upward there was a ravine and a flat. On the other side of it was a deep valley we called Mudstone. On the top of Scout Mountain was a giant boulder that overlooked the land on both sides. And to the west was the stretches of desert valley going on and on forever. This land was truly magical, and breath taking! The sunsets in the west were always amazing. For later adventures there were some abandoned tracks above town under the mountain. To the north they went past a hill that looked like a giant bell. They went on past that for a few miles and then curved west toward east carbon. It had many little valleys to the side of it that way, one of which my brother Joe and I used for a club hide out later on. To the south the tracks bordered Mudstone Valley and then going through a small pass turned north. It went north for a long time and then turned south again. In that way lay the narrows. A path leading through the mountains with cliffs on both sides hundreds of feet high. Off the tracks in that way was a valley, above which was hid a place we called Dragon Gate, where a broken arch looked like two giant claws. East of town was the ruins of a mine and a giant steel bridge we called the Red Bridge. Up and over the mountain range itself was a valley we called the valley beyond, with a forest and a river.

After reading that it is probably no wonder why I like nature so well.

Kitty-corner from our house was the park. A very large lot with a grassy hill and some old metal play equipment. The first day we were there I walked up this hill and looked out over our houses and some of the town.

At the bottom (west side) of the park was an old stone chapel. A very nice wise man lived there named Randy. He had a beard and a walking staff and you would often see him walking in the evening. He had transformed the chapel of the old church into huge personal library, while he lived downstairs. He would let us borrow books sometimes and twilight zone movies.

While I stood on the hill I saw a boy walking up the street with a funny box in his arms, he turned the corner where our house was and then was gone. I stayed on the hill for a while, and the boy came back down the street. This time he had a bat, mitt and ball. He entered the park and approached me.

"Do you want to play?" He asked. I said

"Yeah."

We started playing and became good friends. His name was Lewis Strawsburg.

"You know that box you saw me carrying?"

"Yeah," I said.

"It is a super Nintendo, but don't tell anyone or the whole town will be over to play it."

"Okay," I responded.

It got late and we both went back to our houses.

The next day I began to reassemble my bike. A boy from the next street over came to help. His name was Austin Kemple. He seemed really cool. I told him about Story Games and wondered if he would like to play. He said he would.

As time went on I drew another version of my maps, from the first edition. This new version was in a note book instead of on paper. Austin and I began to play story game off it.

This is the story of the game.

Austin's Story Game

or the Book of Stin

In the story his name was Stin. He was called on a quest in a dream by a wise man named Isban, to put a certain magical red crystal back together. He had no more living relatives and had nothing to lose. He searches Isban out and finds him in town. He follows him to his house in the woods, where they have lunch and talk. Isban instructs him where to find the first one in the bottom of a well.

Stin retrieves it and shows it to the wise man. He sends him on his way with all the clues as to the location of the rest that he knows. Stin goes to the castle, to see if his country will give him any support but he is turned away. Stin goes south and is captured by an army of the Federation. Which is an alliance of evil countries bent on taking over Atara. He is taken on a ship as a slave and works for a time. He kills the captain who stole the one piece of crystal he had, and then swims to the cost they are following.

Stin comes ashore with his crystal. There in the forest he meets an elf named Cyris. Stin talks to him and tells him about his quest and Cyris takes him to his small village called Elftin. Stin returns over the mountains to his own country. He hears the town was terrorized by a

dragon in his absence. Isben says the dragon was looking for the crystals and that Stin might find some in his lair.

Stin trains and saves up for good weapons but still doesn't have a plan. He travels north toward a city where he might find work. He goes off the path to sleep and is almost robed by some loathsome little goblins. He kills them and wonders why they were in this generally peaceful free country, and where they came from. Stin follows their tracks and finds a small camp of Federation Soldiers, who the goblins must have belonged to. Stin Follows them back to a secret tower in the mountains. Apparently the Federation always surrounded the countries they were about to attack with many secret bases.

Stin manages to find a patrolling officer and take his clothes. He sneaks in and releases all the prisoners, he than leads them into the armory and they fight their way out burning the tower down. Stin was able to give another man his sword and get all the good stuff he needed.

He travels south again back toward his own town and waits for the dragon. In a few weeks the ugly green dragon shows up. Stin follows it through the woods on his new horse, he bought with some of the money he got from the tower. The Dragon flies west towards the sea and Stin follows. Stin finds out he is no match for the dragon. It eats his horse and throws him off a cliff into the sea during the fight.

Stin is so upset about the defeat he almost gives up his quest. Flouting in the sea he has to let all his armor go, and he had lost his sword in the fight. He sees a strange little island off the coast. Being closer to it and with the current sweeping him out, he Swims as hard as he can to it. He finds a strange cave and enters. He sees the spirit of an old hermit and follows him into the darkness. The Spirit disappears ahead and it ends up Stin is lost in a giant labyrinth of caves. He finds a place with riddles on the wall and deciphers them. He comes to the end and to his great joy finds a piece of the red crystal. He hears prophesies from the dead hermit and than leaves.

Stin finds the wreckage of an old boat. The boat is entirely unusable but he finds a single intact barrel. Stin uses it as a flouter and tries to make it back to the land but is swept further out to sea. He comes upon another island. This one is much bigger and is made out of one large volcano. He soon finds out the inhabitants are loathsome cave goblins and that they have some slaves. There is one ocean side cave where they have a small ship.

Stin swims into the cave and gets up on the dock in the middle of the night. He finds a sleeping guard and steals his sword. He then finds the dungeon where the slaves are sleeping. He manages to kill the key bearer and let them out. After that it is chaos as the slaves riot and kill many goblins. Stin and others make it to the ship and set sail as they are chased and shot at. Finally they are out into the open ocean with the island far behind them.

They sail south to a nearby island. This Island has several volcanoes and is covered in forest. The men search to far and encounter the elves that live on the island. They have a skirmish where no elves are hurt but several men are shot, and one dies. They are told to promptly leave the island. The ship Stin came on than leaves without him. Stin explores the island on his own and meets an elf. He asks him about his knowledge of the crystals. He tells him he knows nothing about the crystals of which he speaks. The elf does tell him that there is an ancient sunken palace just south of there, and something like that might be found among it's lost treasure. He then also warns him of the sea serpents that live there.

Stin makes a canoe with the help of the elf, he than goes and sails into the ruins. He sees many glittering things below him and long dark menacing shadows. Stin decides it is to dangerous and rows out into the open sea with some provisions back toward his own land. He is spotted and picked up by a federation ship. He is than placed in a temporary holding cell. He works as a slave again in the cowries of the southern castle but is liberated by an army from Orderon.

Stin heads back to his own country to talk to Isbin. Isbin tells him there is talk of the federation also looking for the crystals and that perhaps they already have some. Stin weighs the risks of trying to get the dragons again or going to look in the federation castles. Both seem next to impossible! He finally decides to travel into Federation lands, and at least see if he can find any rumors or leads.

Stin goes on several adventures and army operations to the southern Federation owned lands. One of which was on a federation tower in the docking town, where they paid a heavy price. Another Attack on the castle itself fails several times.

Disillusioned at the outcome of the war Stin wanders east into the low grasslands. There he meets a hunter by the name of Gad. Gad is interested in the quest for the crystals and joins Stin as a partner. They travel through the lands together sneaking into federation castles and goblin's caverns.

Stin finally goes back and successfully steals the crystal from the dragon. Gad, Cyrus, and Stin break into a cavern in the mountains above Elftin where a faction against the government is overthrown and a crystal found. Stin also obtains a rock bird from that adventure.

Through all the adventures Gad remains true to Stin all of which are to numerous to count at this time. Finally Stin is heroically killed in the war against the dark mountain in the south. Thus ends the adventures of Stin.

The End

## My Story Game

At this point I let Austin do something I never let anyone else do. I handed him the maps and I played on as Gad. I traveled through the land of caverns, past the fiery furnace and out the other side of the great eastern mountains. I traveled through the desserts and into the mystical crater lands. I obtained a partner by the name of Elindore. I finally died in the underground goblin kingdom at the edge of the desert in map 13. This retelling of my game may seem short but it was nearly as long as Austin's. A more detailed account will be found in the Book of Stin.

## Austin's Second Game

At this point Austin played on as Elindore and I resumed my position as Story Teller. He played on through the Maps to come and a more detailed account of this will also be found in the Book of Stin.

I shall now continue the telling of my life in Columbia.

My older brothers and Levi Kemple decided to make a track car for the abandoned train tracks at the top of town. They began making it in our basement. They showed me the project and swore me to secrecy. Some neighborhood kids soon noticed my brothers collecting materials and the Clink, Clangs and Bangs coming from our basement. I told my brothers about the danger, we soon made up silly names for ordinary things so listeners would be confused, most of which were names of plane parts. One day as they were hard at work down stairs I saw some neighborhood kids listening in at our heating vents. I said "can I help you?" They realized I must know what this was all about, so they jumped me to ask me questions.

"What are they building downstairs?" asked one kind of dime one.

"A plane," I said casually.

Their eyes lit up as if they believed every word. They really were kind of dumb villains!

"Where will they hide it when they move it out of the basement?" They asked, thinking I was a dumb kid giving away answers like candy.

"In the field across the street," I said.

They left snickering to themselves. I then walked downstairs and told my brothers what had gone on and we all had a good chuckle about it.

Unfortunately the track car was never finished but my brother Adam still wants to make it.

There wasn't a lot of really strange experiences in Columbia like in other places, but it was a time of growth. I received the Priesthood and grew older and wiser. At the end of that first summer I began being home schooled, which I contribute the blessing of not excepting every little piece of propaganda the devil wants stuffed down everyone's throat to.

On the other hand Ben and Adam began getting into some pretty interesting stuff. They began playing story game with Lewis and Clark Strausburg. Adam cast a demon out of an old mining building and Ben had a vision of the future of Columbia, which was grim and filled with sorcery. He said evil will come in 1997, and he was right as we later learned.

The most miraculous things about this time was the devil's attempts on my siblings and my life. A huge chunk of the mountain came down one night and almost killed Anni and Joe on the way back from a hike on the tracks. I had run ahead and was almost home when I heard it, a tumbling sound from the mountain. I wiped around to see a piece of the cliff bigger than a house rolling down. I thought Anni and Joe must be right under where it was going about now. My heart started beating; I ran back to find it had barely missed them.

Another time Ben and I were riding our bikes down a country road called horse canyon road. We got all the way out to the western mesa. There we found a pond and saw some salamanders. We decided to head back because it was getting dark but we headed back too late. Ben's bike chain broke somehow and he began to walk it. He told me to ride ahead and get dad to come pick him up. I did as my older brother said, but we shouldn't have broken the buddy system our mother told us to keep. As I was riding my shoe lace came untied, so I tied it back up and began again. It untied itself again, I was confused. As I rode I saw a sinister cloud drawing close. It was purple from the sunset and looked like a witch head.

Surely it was filled with demons I thought, just than I looked down and this time saw my shoe lace untie itself! It raised up like a serpent and struck sending itself winding around my peddle and gears. The bike wobbled and I couldn't pedal or break. Suddenly I came to a halting crash. I got up, my knee was bleeding. I struggled to unwind my shoe lace. The witch cloud was now almost ready to engulf me. Darkness began to come over me and I felt a presence like I had never felt before. Just than two lights appeared from over the hill. The Darkness fled and the presence ran for it. The car pulled up next to me, I looked up and saw my father standing over me. I told him I was sorry, he said it would be ok and that the Spirit had told him to go get his sons.

I still don't know how he knew where to find us. We didn't tell anyone where we were going, which was also not aloud technically. And It was a place we had never been.

I liked hanging out with Lewis, Clark and my older brothers. At first Clark didn't know if he wanted me hanging around, even though we were the same age. Lewis on the other hand



had been friends with me first and always liked me around. Finally Clark decided he really liked me though and now we are the best of friends. We would play games and watch movies at their house and at other times hike all over or play story game.

I liked hanging out with Austin's family the Kemples as well. So did Lewis, Clark, Adam and Ben. Many times we helped with the chores and read scriptures with them. As the winter came on my parents were trying to find money to buy us better coats than we had had in California. The solution came to my mother as she visited with SaraLee Kemple, Austin's mother. She made medieval cloaks for her kids and offered to show my mother how. So that winter we wore cloaks. It was wonderful and cool! Lewis and Clark's mother was against them though and wouldn't let Lewis and Clark wear them, she thought they were cultish or something.

One day Joe and I were out hiking. We hiked all the way into mudstone valley. We found a cave there carved out of rock Lewis had told us about. A storm appeared out of nowhere and it started to snow. Joe and I becoming colder, and without proper equipment stayed in the cave. I tried to keep my brother Joe warm with my body heat but nothing helped, he just got colder and colder. He began to shiver and I realized we needed help. I thought I might be able to run with all my might back to town and enlist help. I felt good about it so I did. I ran and ran with all my speed through the thickening snow. It got so deep so fast I was having a hard time walking or even finding my way. I prayed I could find help in time. I found my way into town and there walking on the street was my brothers and a few Kemple boys. I told them our predicament and sent them to save Joe. they went up to the tracks and headed south which was the fastest way to mudstone. I went into the house out of strength. My Mom made me a warm bath, but it was too warm and burned me. The Kemple's and my brothers found Joe wondering on the tracks. He had found his way to the tracks as he wandered to higher ground on his own hoping to be more easily spotted. They hurried him back and we were all safe.

In the spring the apricots bloomed and grew. SaraLee showed my mother how to can them, and make jelly. We had tons of apricot jelly, yum!

Soon the Kemples moved to Orangeville but we are still friends to this day. Our time in Columbia continued for another 3 years or so and we had lots of good times I cannot all relate.

There was this kid we met at the top of town named Darick which we played with later on as well. It was during this time Lewis and I found a big pit and named what ever made it the Ogweam. During this time I saw a strange purple spirit wondering on the mountain, which I thought must be the Ogweam. Once it got very close but I had a very eerie feeling about it and ran.

We hiked and explored those mountains more than I could ever tell. We made forts here and there and claimed different valleys as our own countries. One such valley was to the north along the tracks. It had a pond in the bottom and lots of cool rocks. One day as I hiked to it I looked up across the way and saw a strange creature. It looked like a fox with a raccoon tail. It also looked like it had horns or antlers, but I couldn't tell if it was just carrying these or if they might actually be on it. I guess I will never know. Columbia is one of the wildest places in the U.S. though. If you went east there was not so much as a dirt road for three hundred miles.

My time in Columbia was rich and full. It was one of the best times of my life. And the sunsets were the most beautiful in the world!

Just before we moved Ben pulled this running away stunt that was only thwarted by Adam, but that is not a story for this book.

## Chapter 3

### Good or Evil

One Day Joe came into the house saying, "Its too cold around here, why don't we move to a place with palm trees?!" That started my father thinking, and he thought why not it sounded good to him. So in a month or so we were packing our bags. We were on our way to Leesburg Florida, to see how my father's Native American jewelry business would go in the swap meets down there. We all got in the Suburban with a trailer on the back and we were on our way.

Florida was a land of wonder! It had frogs and turtles, palm trees and swamps, truly a land of discovery! We bought a motorhome once we got there and lived in that for the first few weeks and then we moved into an apartment. There was a mean kid that lived next door who was a nephew of Spock from Star Trek. He was trying to be mean to Danny and when I stood up for him the kid decided to pick on me. The next day he came around on his roller blades. He said a few lame insults and than tryed to tack a swing shot for me. I grabbed his arm and pulled him right off his feet, it was extra easy since he was on wheels. Who thinks they can fight on rollerblades anyway? Well once he was on the ground I sat on him, and stayed there for a while. After that he didn't really bother us, which was nice.

We took a trip to the library and Ben found this interesting book by a man named Yogi Ramackarah. He check it out and I checked out the Lost Tails by J.R.R.Tolkien. We were back at our place reading them when Ben wanted to tell me what his book said. I listened intently as

he read to me. It was a series of 13 or so lectures about subjects such as auras energy and mind power. He asked me,

"Do you believe in such things?"

"Yeah of course." I responded.

After a little talk we decided to experiment on the Yogi's words. He explained how one could come to see auras through a series of concentrations and meditations. We did so and found just like the book said, that it worked. We began to see auras and be able to decipher their color and meaning. I was always puzzled why mine was green sometimes, which according to Yogi Ramackarah was a sign of insanity. I certainly didn't consider myself insane, in fact I recognized that I thought much clearer and more logically than most people.

It talked about how to project your aura and make it into different shapes, Ben and I tried it. It worked wonderfully! We would take turns making various shapes and having the other identify it. One time I decided to make something extra cool. I concentrated all my energy and focused as deep as I could and then let it loose. It was a dragon, with wings, spikes and scales. It slithered and flew through the air, than landed on a nearby box and disappeared in an explosion of aura made fire. Ben was very impressed! I asked him to identify my shape and he correctly told me all about my dragon.

The ward at church was awesome there. We met a boy by the name of Aaron Coleman, he was really cool and was friends with me and Ben. He had a knee surgery just before we met him and was still on crutches. He became very interested in all sorts of magical subjects. We told him what we knew and he longed to learn more. He seemed to be confused how it all fit into the doctrine of the church though and wondered its relation to the priesthood. We didn't have a strait answer for him at the time. We just told him that the priesthood was Gods power and that magic was our power, or the power of things around us in this world. That didn't seem to satisfy his questions though.

I went over to Aaron's house for a sleep over one time, he lived out in some beautiful woods. We were bored and had nothing to do, and we didn't want to go to bed. So we dressed up in cloaks, painted our faces and went out. We pretended we were some kind of cultist wizards as we walked down the dark road. Well some old lady called the cops because a police car came around. I jumped into the trees with little effort but Aaron had never been in such a situation. He just stood there. The cop got out and started asking him questions, I could tell the police had no knowledge of me. I decided I better stick up for my friend, so I came out. The cop was actually a really nice guy and just asked us to go back to Aaron's house.

Another time we had a sleep over at Aaron's house with Ben and helped build their new house. We slept up on the floor we had just laid for his new house. We had a candle and played story game. I was the story teller, Ben and Aaron just used characters from previous games. Ben was Sir Erik from Lewis's game in Columbia.

Later on I showed Aaron the map of my world. He told some of his friends at mutual about it. One fat kid that was always playing magic there asked me about it. I had a dark feeling about him so I told him nothing. He took a new interest in me after that. Once he approached me and asked me for the key words into my world. I told him,

"Get thee hence Satan!"

then he said,

"Let me be the God of your world."

I repeated myself, this time saying it in the name of Jesus Christ and he fled.

Aaron later asked me about that incident and I told him what I thought of his friend. Than he asked,

"Isn't Heavenly Father the God of every world even yours?" Then I said,

"Does your father take credit for your creations?"

It was time for youth conference and we all went. It was at this mansion in the wood by a lake. That night we played a huge capture the flag game which was really fun! Then we made our camps. Aaron decided he wanted to be tough like me and sleep outside under the stars. We slept and talked together that night. He told me about how much he wanted to go water skiing the next day, but how he couldn't because of his leg and crutches. Ben and I had just been studying the chapter in the Yogi book about healing. I asked him if he wanted me to try and magically heal it. He said,

"Sure why not."

I positioned myself right and cupped my hands like I was instructed. I gathered my energy and looked on his aura for the hurt spots. I then drew the bad energy out and replaced it with my good energy. I projected my energy as powerfully as possible into his leg. We then fell asleep. I awoke to him saying,

"Hans Hans, It worked I am healed!"

I turned over and looked at him dancing and jumping up and down like a mad man. I was very happy for him and the other youth couldn't believe it. That day he water skied like he had wanted to.

There was a park by our house around a large lake. My siblings and I would go there often and play, and feed the ducks. There was also many alligators but we never got too close. One day there was an art festival there. People from all around displayed and sold art music carvings and cool things of all kinds. It was really exiting. There was also an art competition for school age kids. I entered a picture of a striped dragon I did, it had stripes kind of like a snow tiger. It won first place and I was very happy.

Around this time Ben met a new friend, from I don't know where. He had a dark look to me! After Ben came back from doing whatever he was doing with him he would talk about ridiculous things like his past lives and the like. One time I saw Ben go into a building in a neighborhood by our house. It didn't look like a Christian church really or a Buddhist temple. It looked kind of like a Krishna building but not quite. It had a European flair to it. The building had no name and to me looked like something out of the light half of the dark side, which dosen't really exist by the way. After that Ben's countenance grew slowly darker and darker.

I only later found out that Ben got mixed up in some bad magical stuff, and after in he wanted out. As we left Florida he was leaving a dark cloud behind him. He and Adam rode in the car behind the motorhome, where he told him the whole story. I later found out that when we moved Ben made his heroic escape and was scared for a while after that that some member of that evil society might come and hunt him down.

My Father wasn't really making money in Florida so we decided to move all the way back to Utah like I have mentioned. We headed up to North Carolina first and visited my father's sister. It was a blast, she lived on the Tar River and we got to fish and swim and stuff. One time me and Ben took the canoe out. We headed up the river for a few miles. Finally we found this strange broken down dock. We docked and got out. we walked up into the woods to see where it led. We found an old plantation mansion and barn with slave houses. It was an eerie and evil feeling place so we left.

After that nice visit we turned our faces west and headed back to Utah.

We found an apartment in Price, the same one in fact that we had lived in already for the few months before Columbia. My mother said it was just like coming home after a long trip. He even found a salad bowl in the cupboard we had been missing, that we accidently left there. It was truely bizzare! Adam soon left on his mission to Tiawan. We rented the downstairs as well this time, and Nathan Kemple and Clark Strausburg came to live with Ben

and I down there. It was awesome, we made it into the coolest pad ever! We had no furniture, a bead door, and all we ate was ramen.

Me and Ben began to play a story game there.

Ben's Story Game

or the book of Kendro

Kendro was a boy who grew up in a small village in a small forested Kingdom. As he grew up he became a guard in the king's army. One day there is a small battle and Kendro is wounded. He is discharged for a time to tend to his injury. He heals quite quickly and decides he wants to take a small trip, since he has never been out of his own country.

He travels the road to the east. One day he sees a strange glitter in the mountains and wants to see what it is. He makes his way through dense forest and finally comes into a clearing where the clittering thing is. He finds it's a bizzare metal pyramid. He can't figure a way in so he heads back to the road. He goes on and comes to a small fishing kingdom on the side of a great lake. He meets a wise man there who shows him a map of the area. The dwarves lived across the lake in the mountains. In the center of the lake south of there, there is a giant tower. It used to belong to a united kingdom, who united the entire land but now it was over run by dark and loathsome creatures of evil. There were elves to the south on the same side of the lake as the town he was in. To the south the lake itself emptied into the outer ocean through a thin canal.

Kendro goes around to see if the different races will unite to take the tower back, but soon finds they all refuse to cooperate with one another. He finds from the same wise man that there is a prophesy that one day the king will return with his sword and take the tower back. Kendro thinks what better person to be than the one the prophesy is about and asked where he might find the sword. He is directed far across the lake into the eastern desert. He is almost driven insane by thirst and finally sees a tall tower like mountain. He goes to it and climbs it, to his great excitement he finds a spring of water and over the water he finds an alter with the sword.

"Well if I found it I must be the chosen one," he reassures himself.

He heads back down the mountain and across the desert to the lake. Through means of working and building up money he buys a horse and some equipment. He also tries to convince people he is the prophesied King and that they should come on that glorious day and fight with him. No one listens though and they all think he is a mad man!

The day comes and he decides to fight alone. He rides up to one of the great stone bridges going out to the tower. To his astonishment he sees the giant doors open. But it isn't a welcoming jester, out pour ranks of hideous creatures. Orks, goblins, Ogres, and dark clocked figures that look like wizards. Kendro deciding to be brave and win or die puts down his helmet draws his sword and charges. The evil creatures watch him charging the several mile stretch over the granite bridge. As he draws closer and closer some of the creatures start faltering. He looked so sure of himself, and fearing the prophesy the wizards start retreating. This retreat catches the attention of the rest and they all start running back for the doors. Kendro comes upon them and a miracle happens. His sword of the King shines bright and everything it slashes bursts into light.

Kendro didn't know if he really was the King or if the Sword was just waiting to be handled by one who had faith in the prophesy. Either way he plowed into the main hall and started his massacre of evil. This whole thing scared all the creatures so bad they even began fighting among themselves. Kendro made his way through the tower all the way to the top, where it was said that a dragon rested. He found the dragon resting, but to his horror the sword although burnt the dragon's flesh did not make him evaporate into light.

A furious battle ensued were the dragon picked Kendro up and threw him out the window. Kendro found himself falling, he looked down. To his great horror he was falling a very long way! He tried to catch himself on a passing balcony but just broke his arm. reality began sinking in. Than an unlikely thing happened, a white rock bird from nowhere caught him in mid air and Kendro passed out. He awoke in the woods, the pain of his arm was instantly almost unbearable. He got up and staggered to a nearby road, a passing farmer picked him up and brought him into the fishing village.

The wise man who had befriended Kendro couldn't believe he was still alive. He tended to his arm and took care of him for a time. When the people saw him in a cast some just starred others laughed.

After a long while Kendro decided to go back for another beating. He got one! This time he hid his wounded body in the tower until he could sneak out. This time even more people were surprised he was alive

Kendro went back a third time and killed the dragon. He then went through the tower purging it. After a long time, it seemed purged. Kendro looked out a window and saw an unlikely scene. Ships of all kinds, Dwarves, Men, Elves and giants. They all wanted the tower for themselves, their greed had led them to a great navy battle. Kendro rushed to lock both gates! Than he waited to see what would happen. Finally, he asked himself what would the King do?

Kendro opened the gate and walked out. He saw in the light of day that the armies had decided to unite and take the tower and then settle their disputes. The ugly head of a giant wooden goat adorning a battle ram stared him down. The army got closer and closer. When they were in earshot he began to speak.

"My brothers would you this day kill your own King and knock down your own gate?" Then Kendro held up the sword. "I am the one in the prophesy! Will you unite this day? Or continue in your bloodshed? Will you throw away the only hope of a perfect age in our land? Will you drop the shackles that bind you or will you let the only dream fade in the darkness of the night?" By this time the army was within feet. "I am your King and I will not kill my own people!" Kendro then dropped his sword at their feet. The army stopped and looked at Kendro and the sword. One by one the people's hearts began to soften and one by one they began to cry. One stepped forward and picked up Kendro's sword, he then handed it to Kendro and said,

"My King!"

"Long live King Kendro and long stand the white tower!" The multitude shouted.

Then Kendro said,

"Come my friends there is a lot of work to do!"

Kendro, the Dwarves, the Elves and the Humans began cleaning and repairing the marvelous tower. Thus Kendro became king of the Lake Tower. He didn't dissolve the other kingdoms but simply invited anyone to come and be part of his association. He opened a port to the south of the tower island that would carry things directly into the tower itself through a passage. He got the Elves to redo the woodwork and the Dwarves to start digging a tunnel downward. Also the white rockbirds like the one that saved him started perching atop the tower. So Kendro made an aviary for them. There were never better days for the tower and the land round about. And Kendro ruled for a time in peace.

Finally having his Kingdom in order Kendro decided to set sail and explore new lands. After a time he returned. He explored the east on foot and found a magic fairy pond in which if you emerged yourself you would find yourself somewhere else. This is how he made it to Atara, He found by means of his rock bird a castle in the clouds. It was populated by righteous people, they told him about the evil race and their flying ships. He found the race of evil winged creatures with a flying ship, which he took. And by means of that ship he returned again to his home land.

Upon returning to Atara he found the evil mountain of darkness. With many men he laid siege upon it. Yet they failed.



With the Flying ship Kendro made his way to the far north to visit Windor the Northern dragon. Windor showed him many amazing things and told him of the islands of infamy, the most evil place on earth. Kendro headed there and entered into a mortal fight with its King and won. Another King arose yet this one hid underground.

Kendro went to the tallest mountain on Magalaya to find a way into the underworld which he did. There he fought that King and also won. From that King he obtained the evil ever cutting blade. The sword that without a hilt would cut its way to the center of the earth if dropped. Kendro delivered it to his Dwarves who used it to dig their tunnel to the underworld. There they found the strange feeling creatures called the Seaguar.

From the underworld Kendro received the ring that would allow him to see shadow people. He flew up to the north again, and vanquished an evil kingdom of shadow people living in the ice. He then went to Atara to fight the shadows there. And after that in Magalaya.

One day as Kendro flew through the sky on his ship another flying ship with the same winged creatures attacked. His men and himself fought desperately for their ship, but amid the fight one winged creature grabbed the navigating stone that controlled the ship and through it. The ship sped off in a random direction. Kendro and his men flew off the side. The Mast was also ripped off and was falling with them. Kendro was knocked out on impact but one of his men saved him. One of his noble knights swam with him in arm through the raging of the deep. When they washed up on shore of a random Island Kendro was alive but his knight was dead. He had given his life for his king. Kendro wandered on the island for a time. He found a hut and wondered if anyone lived there. He went in and found no one. He stayed there and lived for a while. One night a spirit appears to him and tells him he is an ancient wise man who used to live there. He Tells Kendro of a place where there is a mist that is the veil between their world and the fairy world. He instructs him how to find it and disappears.

Kendro makes a boat and finds his way to the land of Ashon, there he finds the mist and walks through it. On the other side is a world he could have only imagined. He meets many magical creatures who tell him of the rotation of the planets and the secrets of the universe. Finally when he has learned what he needs to know like a dream he is delivered to his own bed. He continues to reign in peace all his days, wiser than ever.

THE END

My brother Ben and I would stay up half the night playing. I usually knew it was time to stop when I would ask him what he would do and hear a snore instead of a response. This story played out in my own mental world inspired us so much I decided to make a mural of it. On the wall of our main room, I painted the lake and tower surrounded by mountains.

When we lived in Price we visited the Kemples in Orangville all the time. We made play swords out of golf clubs and would have wars in a forest by the Kemples house.

During this time I went to work for a farmer named Brother Powell. He had cows, horses, chickens, and pigs, He also had quite a few fields.

I asked my mother if I could start school again and go to 9th grade. She said she didn't know if I could do it, but I decided to prove her wrong which I did. I went to school, I had to start in special Ed classes because I wasn't up to standards. I took my first Art class in which I was far above standards. It was during this time I wrote a children's book called The Mathematical Comquat. It was about a Comquat who had dreams of being a mathematician. He travels through several strange lands meeting giants and musical anteaters. Finally he meets a wise head sticking out of a wall who directs him to a door that leads to Lala Land, the place where you can do math all day. He goes and lives happily ever after.

I finished 9th grade and started 10th in Carbon High. I began taking band in the percussion section, we had the best band teacher ever named Mr. Vanwagner. I started on symbols but liked practicing the other instruments. At first I was terrible at marching but Mr. Vanwagner worked a lot with me. The day came that marked our very first field show at a football game. I prayed that God would help me remember my steps and my music. As we took our positions I suddenly forgot everything! I trusted God would help me though. I followed the spirit and began to move. When the show was over Mr. Vanwagner ran up to me gave me a big hug and said,

"You did perfect!."

I was very relieved to say the least.

My last class of the day was seminary which was also my favorite. I had a wonderful time my 10th grade year. New Years came and Ben, Clark, I and Nathen went out and chased a train up helper canyon, which was fun. The time was drawing near that my parents were talking of moving again to Provo, but something very important would happen before that.

## Chapter 4

### The Green Candle

Hans

In January of 1999 Hans was sitting alone in a dark basement apartment in Price Utah. He is sitting before a lit candle and meditating. Soon Hans feels his mind reach out into the

unknown and make contact with something. Hans realizes he had directly touched the world of the mind. He calls the world of the mind the and resolves to continue to meditate.

One night I came into the bedroom and lit the candle in the corner. It was a tall thick Yellow candle on a wooden holder. I sat down and lit a match. I held the match to it and watched the wick ignite. It was a beautiful candle and I loved looking into the flame of candles. I began taking loose pieces of wax and melting them over the flame just for fun.

Suddenly something strange began to happen, the light turned a deep forest green. I looked at it in amazement and staring into the candle flame I saw something beautiful. It was like an entire universe in the flame. Before I knew it all I saw was the flame as if I was getting smaller. Than I was carried away in the most amazing vision!

I say in all soberness that in that moment I experienced the experiences and learned the wisdom of a thousand earth ages. Everything became one before me and the Gods showed me what was beyond my wildest dreams.

Every Man that is to attain perfection must experience every experience on the earth and in the world beneath and in heaven above or he cannot obtain it! After this vision of visions I was never the same, I began to realize how the world really works and it was even stranger than I had before supposed. In this great spectrum of experiences I traveled across the furthest deserts, I climbed the tallest mountains. I fought beasts in heaven and I quenched the fires of mantle lizards beneath. I laid in forests on stone beds for a thousand years just so I would understand the language of leaves. I had many lives and many adventures. Was this the panoramic story of my own intelligence or the shared stories of others? I may never know. I sailed through space and to stranger places beyond the veils of Ice and time. I saw an endless space of metallic noodles and visited cities of immortals on the surface of burning suns.

Surely if I could tell my whole story the largest libraries couldn't contain all the volumes of books it would produce, nor is my mortal frame strong enough to write for the ages it would take to express it. Can it be condensed into one chapter properly? I think not, but the more relevant thing is that you may continue past this part and learn of Veritanism's beginnings, which might prove more important in your case.

This vision changed my entire outlook on life. I was never quite the same. I went to go tell Ben about it but realized I didn't know exactly where so start or where to end, so I decided to tell no one until I had a more elegant way of expressing myself. I can tell you this, and that is that most of my art since that time has been scenes from it. After I met WiL which you shall read about shortly He affectionately called whatever I told him about it, the "Hans Story."

## Chapter 5

### It Begins

A few weeks later on February 1st he is sitting in the cab of a rental truck next to his father driving high in the Mountains over Soldier Summit heading to their new home in Provo, Utah. Hans wonders what might be in store for him there. On Monday he knows he will be starting classes at his new school.

Wed Feb 10th was Hans's first day of school. During lunch to his surprise a group of friendly (albeit strange) looking friends to invite him to eat lunch at their table. They tell him that the name of their club is the merry mice and that they have a tradition to make new kids their King for a day. They have a merry lunch and after they head back to class Hans wonders when he will see them again. After school he sees his new friends near the front doors and they come and treat him like a king again. They are busy paying their exaggerated respects when his Mom walks in through the double doors to pick him up. His mom gives him a funny look and he is slightly embarrassed. After a short talk with his Mom they both agree that they live pretty close to the school and that Sam will just walk home from school in a little while.

Hans and two of his new friends Steven Gassler, and Will Whitlark, leave the school in high spirits and Steve takes them to his "doorway to the center of the earth" which is a large round hole that he is digging with his brother that is already about 7 feet deep and ten feet across. Will tells Hans to visit his house some day after school.

Within a Week Hans is over at Will's house after school and they listen to music that he composed with Buzz. Will shows him around his house and they talk about music. Over the next few weeks they have many after school visits and Will gives Hans a copy of Buzz so he can start composing. Soon Hans is showing Will some of the music he has composed.

One Saturday in mid February Hans goes over to Will's house and they have an interesting conversation. They talk about strange occurrences that they have heard of and whether they believe in such things as UFO's, supernatural powers etc. They find that they believe much in common. The conversation leads to supernatural experiences that they have had and they find that they have both had such experiences. Will relates something that happened to him in a swamp where he was approached by a witch that gave him the "power of the goop". This is a power that would remain with Will and reside in his guts until it could be used somehow. Hans then relates some of the dreams he has had about a man named Enthnar. In some dreams he is Enthnar and in some dreams he watches Enthnar do things. Evidently this person is important to the destiny of Hans and the rest of the world. Hans had a

dream that when Enthnar was young he went into a great forest and met a strongly magical woman who lived in a house made inside of a tree trunk. She gives Enthnar power to understand a secret of the universe that will enable him to fulfill his destiny.

After this Hans finds through other dreams that Enthnar has gone to another world. This other world is seen in Hans's mind's eye and he relates to Will how he has been given the responsibility to document the world and shape its existence from the secrets he saw while he was dreaming. Will takes great interest in this and decides to show Hans a story he wrote from a dream that he had when he was younger.

In the dream a man is taken into a room that has no concrete form. The walls seem to change and ripple like water as you look at them. At the center of the room is a table with all sorts of very delicate and important looking instruments made out of all types of materials. Behind the table stand three imposing figures. They are here to help the man do something and to test him. They ask him a series of questions. While Will reads this part of the book he asks Hans the questions directly to see how he will answer. The questions are about the creation of a world and what is to be ordained to be its characteristics. From Hans's answers Will knows that the man in the story is Hans.

From a very young age Will knew that he would meet this man and do important things with him. Will then knows that Hans is the man he had been looking for during much of his life. From this time onward Will is very interested in Hans and what he thinks about all sorts of different things. Throughout the end of the month of February Will reads a lot of books including "Alan Mendelson, Boy from Mars" and "Shaboomie". These books deal with states of being and how these states allow us to understand things that others may not. For a few days Will and Hans spend much of their time together talking about things Will has experienced or read about and philosophizing about what all these things really mean. They talked and agreed that there were many worlds and dimensions that are linked to our own and must be ruled through states of mind.

One day they are talking about dreams that they have had and they make an earth shattering discovery. They have both had dreams where a strong magical being is trying to contact them and tell them things. She is a beautiful young girl who has power over the elements. She often comes to Will and Hans in their dreams standing in the air or flying on a great swan. She has blue hair and perfectly white smooth skin. Hans and Will had already had nearly identical dreams where they meet this being in her garden that is home to floating creatures not unlike jellyfish. There in the garden she had already told Hans and Will some things that they must do. At this time Will and Hans realize that this woman is real and trying to truly contact them (rather than a symbol that they have made up).

They accept her as their leader and Will and Hans call themselves the "disciples of the Swan Maiden". Will becomes very excited about this realization and becomes convinced that the swan maiden is contacting them from another dimension that can only be accessed and understood by minds in a trance state. Will and Hans talk about dreams Will has had in the past where he is transported to another world where everyone knows him and respects him greatly. There are all sorts of places and animals there.

He once had a dream where he goes to a place that is a great desert of black sand with large roaming beasts like buffalo. He possesses the theory that he and Hans had lived in another dimension in times past and must have forgotten their work there upon entering this dimension. The swan maiden must be a being from that world that is contacting them so that they can do a great work in this world that will have great significance. The next time that they meet together they know that they must begin their work in earnest. They both agree that in order to stay in contact with the Swan Maiden and learn further truth that they must attain to a higher state of mind.

They begin meditation together and create new terms that will allow them to communicate about their discoveries. In order to measure states of mind they create a new measuring system based upon the premise that humans in intellectual pursuits are only using around 6% of their brains; this beginning, albeit natively intelligent state, is termed level 6. Their new goal is to go beyond this level that they have been operating at and reach higher states of mind. Based on this simple scale they theorize that when they reach level 26 (more than 4 times their current level) that they would experience a breakthrough. After several days of working towards higher states of mind Will and Hans took some time to talk about how they have done so far and what they are experiencing. When they reached higher states of mind they found that they had much more power over their faculties. Will also noticed that there seemed to be a natural force or "gravity" that led him to lower states of mind and created a resistance that had to be overcome to reach more lucid states.

The struggle for higher states of mind was then characterized by the same terms used in climbing a mountain. They talk about what might happen to their mental state when a breakthrough occurs. Using their lexicon the two agreed that a breakthrough would include a loss of resistance or "gravity". This means that the individual might go into "psychic freefall". This theory led Hans and Will to wonder if the individual would fall into another dimension or lose contact with what people usually refer to as reality. They found they were not absolutely sure whether the breakthrough would lead to a higher state of mind or if the breakthrough would be the downfall of the individual.

March 3rd

(Wednesday) was Steven Gashler's birthday. Because of this Hans went over to Will's house before the party and spent some time meditating with him before they walked over to Steve's party. As they crossed the high school campus they realized something peculiar was happening. They began moving into higher states of mind in a psychic freefall until they reached level 26. At the same moment and looked at each other and realized the other was also at the same level. At that moment they felt at one with the earth and realized that they had complete power over the base elements of earth, water, air, and fire. At this state they could command the elements and make any physical change to their surroundings that they wanted. At that moment they also realized to their greater shock that they had no desire or will to change their surroundings. Being at one with the earth meant that they were at peace with the way it was then. When they reached Steven's party at his house they told him that the powers of the earth had been given to them.

They explained how they obtained the power and Steve became very excited. He had been looking for such a path for his entire life and now made the commitment to follow it. As Will and Hans played the night games of Steve's party up among the hills above Steve's house they found that even though they had no will to change the world they would sometimes use their powers inadvertently. When they wished for something it would simply automatically occur. In this way they walked unseen among their friends who were seeking them in their night games while Steve lay alone in his hiding place on the hill and wondered what great things were in store as he gazed upward at the springtime stars.

The next day Will and Hans got together to talk about what had happened. Before they had reached state 26 they had theorized that this state would give them power to do a special mission the Swan Maiden has sent them to do. They now realized that this state could not be used in such a way, because its power rests in bringing a person to be at one with the world, which by nature resists change. In this way a principle of resistance is internalized even as external resistance is taken away.

Because of this disappointment Will began to wonder if they could attain to real power while they remained in this mundane sphere where they are often powerless. Hans replied that maybe they only needed to reach yet a higher state where they would enjoy an awareness many times higher than state 26. This might lead them to a mindset that would transcend the awareness of the world that resists change. Will wondered if this level of awareness might lead to a different sort of freefall than the type they had already experienced and whether the freefall might send them into another dimension. Will and Hans both agreed that it was quite probable that a complete change of mindset would send them into another dimension that is governed by this new principle. They both then decided that they would reach this state of mind that they estimated would be close to state 76 on their scale.

## Chapter 6

### The Meta

Later that week on Saturday Will and Hans were together and deep in meditation when they found that they had accessed another dimension while they were yet awake. They had attained unto a level of awareness that they termed level 36- that is 6 times the normal amount of awareness.

Will went into a trance and found himself in a dark and confined space. The walls of the cranny he was in felt and smelled like wood. With a start he realized he was in a coffin! All of a sudden he heard sounds from outside, the coffin trembled, and with a creak the lid of the coffin was being pried open. The light that flashed before his eyes in the opening crack of the coffin was blinding so that he could not see who was freeing him. By the time the coffin was open enough for him to get out and he came to himself enough to crawl out the people who had freed him had gone.

Will found the coffin half in and half out of the ground near the edge of a dreary and dead looking town. The town looked as if it had once been a happy place before its denizens had left it waste. He was about to go into the town to see what he could find when he stopped in his tracks.

He had heard something near him, as if it was a whisper, in the earth, below. He crouched down and was at a loss of what to do when he saw something slithering out of the damp earth, flaccidly slow, like a tangle of anemic pale earth worms. With a start, he realized what it was, a human hand! He clutched it with a shudder and began digging frantically with his other hand in order to free the poor man. When he had freed the man's head, shoulders, and upper torso, Will stopped digging because the man appeared dead. He was an older man, with a beard, and faint lines on his face. Before Will looked away from the man he was startled as the man suddenly sat up.

The old man quickly pulled his legs from the earth and started toward the town with Will's hand still clutched in his. As they headed toward the town the man looked frantically around as if someone was going to attack them and muttered to Will that they must hurry. Before long they came to a nice looking home with a forest green door and windows with intact glass in the panes. The man hurried directly into the home and quickly shut the door behind them.



The dim interior was richly furnished with bookshelves against the walls with many old tomes. Once the man realized that he had made his escape from outside he collapsed into a large leather armchair with a cloud of dust and a sigh of relief. The man looked up at Will and recognized him at once. He saw Will's bewildered expression and realized with a faint smile what was going on. He introduced himself as Trevanian the Magi and urged Will to sit down. When Will sat down and fully got a chance to look at the old man he realized that he recognized him from dreams in his childhood.

The old man thanked Will for saving him as he got up and served tea for both of them. He seemed to be in high spirits as they began to sip their tea in silence, but then his face soon became grim as he explained to Will, "these lands in the Meta are now controlled by the wicked overmind. His power is strong here so I warn you of his power." He further explained, "The people of this town were all buried by the overmind, you must prepare because the overmind will soon come to your land in the physical world!" At this shocking news Will came out of his trance and found himself back at his house sitting with Hans.

While Will was experiencing this strange vision Hans had also gone to the Meta, but to a place that was soothing and quiet. He found himself in the garden of the Swan Maiden with happy creatures, not unlike jellyfish, floating overhead. He looked around and soon saw the Swan Maiden standing nearby. Hans was so pleased to be in the garden with the maiden that he went to her, and before he thought of his words, blurted out, "I know you! I saw you riding on a Swan!" She smiled and simply said, "I know you too, you are Hans Woodman." She began to explain some answers to what Hans was wondering in his heart, (spoke her name; that Hans soon forgot, though we know it starts with a "C") and said, "I am one of the Titans of the ancient days. I have been waiting for you a long time, and there are many things that you must do; but beware! My Titan stone is still on the earth and so I will be able to help you, but darkness will soon cover your land. Soon the gifts and power you had before will not come so easily, and the overmind of the old days will return." After speaking these words in such quick succession she seemed to blush at speaking so darkly of things to come and smiled at Hans as if he was some great hero as she said, "I send the love of the people of the Meta." At this Hans awoke from his trance and found himself back in Will's house.

The Next School Day (March 8th) Will and Hans were still in wonderment at what had happened to them. They were walking together when they met Steve and a bunch of their other friends. Steve was still thinking about what Hans and Will had told him on his birthday. He had been talking to some of their mutual friends about starting an organization that would be the receptacle of principles of power. He excitedly said, "I know what we can call our organization!" And showed them a piece of paper that had the word Canada printed in large font on it. Will and Hans thought that would be a great nickname for the group- it seemed to

denote something familiar, and yet different, much like what a parallel dimension would be like. They also thought that this would be a great nickname for the Swan Maiden, since Hans had quickly forgotten her name (that he nevertheless remembered starts with a "C"), and it sounds feminine. Because of this Hans and Will told their friends that the name of the Swan Maiden was Canada and the idea seemed like a breakthrough to everyone involved. Will wanted to bring these new Canadians deeper into the mysteries of their new organization though. He took the warnings that they received from the Meta quite seriously and knew that the new recruits would need something substantial to hold onto to keep them from the power of the overmind when they would be tempted to believe that what he and Hans told them is a sham. Because of this he whispered the true and secret name of their organization in each of their ears. This acted as a de facto initiation for each and later became a source of levity for the group. This is because there was a few of their acquaintances nearby that saw Will whispering in each of their ears and ran up to the circle of friends to hear the secret. The result of this was that when Will was done telling everyone the secret name that he kept whispering in each of their ears, but this time told them all kinds of nonsense. This made them all laugh and thereby diffuse the situation while they all became closer to one another as a result of the additional "secrets".

A Few Days Later in the beginning of May Hans was over at Will's house and they were sitting at the kitchen table they were talking and just letting their eyes wander over the room when they saw something small inside the doorway leading to the living room. They were so intrigued that they slowly stood up to take a closer look. It was a small figure in the form of a man walking inside the doorway up the vertical post! It was only several inches tall and was an ethereal yellow. It did not seem to have any intelligence, but would just keep walking along dumbly without awareness. Will and Hans began to cross the kitchen floor to get close enough to really study it, but it simply disappeared without a trace. They were to find out later that this being was not alive, at least like us, but a form that energy takes. This knowledge highlights the principle that all things have an intelligence and spirit native to it.

Ever since Hans had first contacted the Meta through meditation with Will they had been very enthusiastic about continuing their quest to reach higher states of mind. Their prior experiences had fueled their desire to try and reach level 76. They now truly believed that at that level that they would bodily go to another dimension and have an adventure there that was going to be vital to their future fight against the being that was called the Overmind. They had been meditating together every day much more vigorously to reach their goal, often doing so for hours at a time. One day they were doing so at Will's house again; when suddenly began to experience psychic freefall. Once they started to reach states well above 26 they started to see and hear strange things. The forces in the room appeared embodied and they heard voices like echoes from other dimensions. They continued to reach higher and higher states of mind

and they became very afraid as it became very dark and quiet. They could feel that they were in danger when all of a sudden they heard a disembodied voice speaking desperately like someone that had not spoken for a long time. The voice said, "Why are you trying to reach level 76?" Hans was petrified and said nothing, but Will answered the voice, "Because we want to reach another world". After a short pause that seemed like eternity the voice spoke again, but with a grave concern that chilled them to the bone, "I tried that once and it did not work! Dimensions are like rocks floating alone in space. If you reach state 76, then you will fall into the land that lies between, as I have done." The voice had begun to be less loud as if it was speaking from further and further away, but was still audible as it spoke on, "particles in the universe move in an organized fashion and if your particles move off their course then it is very unlikely that they will fall into another order without guidance." Will and Hans had begun to hear the sadness in the man's voice and they began to fully realize what had happened to this individual, but the voice spoke on from an ever growing distance, "I studied my whole life to reach state 76, and when I did, I was sucked into the blackness- just now I heard you breathing and I knew that I was now closer to a dimension than I had been for ages! I will soon pass from here and be alone again- I hope that you take my advice."

After these last words Will and Hans could no longer hear the voice, but could still feel his concern surrounding them like a ghostly presence. They were shocked beyond words at what they had heard and full of terror. From this moment on they only meditated in a balance with their everyday life and only so they could reach states where they could reach their friends in the Meta during light trances.

Right before summer in June our teacher Miss Skoonmaker told us in her ancient world history class about the allegory of the cave by Plato. After school I and Steve went over to Will's house and Andrew tagged along. It was almost summer and a warm day so we all discussed the allegory on Will's front steps. We all decided that we should go find Plato's book "the republic". The next day we went to the school library to find it. We were talking about some Canadian things when the librarian must have heard us and decided that we were up to no good. So she told us to leave the library or she would call the principal's office. We promptly left the library thinking that very odd indeed. The most confused person, however, was Andrew that was tagging along. After school that day we all went to Will's house again but this time we went down stairs to his basement. We turned the TV on to a channel filled with static. Will didn't change the channel even though Andrew asked why we were watching static. We all just sat there watching it until me and Will started seeing something. Then Steve saw it and then finally Andrew as well. We all saw a dark leather book with a window on it. Through the window we could see bright blue skies and green fields. Wind blew over the grass and it was amazing. Then a red snake came into the TV screen flying around the book. Finally he turned and flew into the center of the window, right into the cover of the book until the tip of his tail disappeared

through the window. Then the window disappeared and in its place was a seal that almost looked like a coat of arms. We watched for a while longer and saw the book suddenly open, but then the vision faded and none of us saw what was written in the book. After that Will and I showed Steve and Andrew how to meditate. We did so in a circle with me on the south and Will on the north, Steve in the east and Andrew on the west.

When we meditated Will saw the place of the black desert and I saw the place of the White tower in the world I wrote down as a kid. I don't know what Steve and Andrew saw. After this Andrew asked me to go on a walk with him up in the valley behind the school. He showed me where there was a couch in the forest and we explored more of the woods. As we walked I asked him if anything out of the ordinary had ever happened to him besides yesterday. He said no, so I went on and told him just some of the strange things that had happened to me. Then I told him that an evil man named the overmind was coming and that he would enslave the minds of men. Andrew took everything very well and when I asked him to join us he said he would. Then on the way back Andrew said, "Look, what's that!" I looked up, and over the hill toward the school stood a machine standing on a great tower like a pole. We both felt a dark feeling emanating from it. We ran from there all the way to Will's house. We started to relax once we were inside and just hung out. I then told Will what I had told Andrew.

That evening we had an early birthday party for me because I was going to Beaver High Adventure Base to be on staff for the summer. I had been at Beaver a few days when some of the staff and I went to do the three peaks hike by the twenty-five mile route. Chris Cox was with me pretty much the whole way and we talked a lot. Once we got to the Ice house all of a sudden my brother Adam came walking along (his first time at Beaver as well). We visited for a bit and then we went on and Adam went a different way. As we approached Puffer Lake and behold my brother Ben also came walking along. That was all very strange but we said hi and he said they were just up visiting and we went on while Ben went another way. After Puffer Lake the trail went straight up hill with a grade that gets more and more difficult. When we made it to the little old prospectors cabin under the tree line, we dropped our packs there and headed up Delano (the largest mountain of the three). Delano was hard the first time, but fun; and it was the most beautiful place I had ever seen. As we headed away from the peak of Delano we saw mountain goats on the saddle between Delano and Holly. Holly was fun since I was now getting used to the altitude, I went straight up it climbing up the rocks. I carried a rock up and added it to the altar on the top of Holly. The cliff face on the back of Holly fell away into a canyon about 800 feet below and the ground there was not visible beyond the clouds. As we continued on we went to the far side of Holly to the great Ice glacier. We all slid down into the saddle below, it was a blast! We were flying at least 35 miles an hour down the ice and glided to a stop in the bowl below. After this we all headed upward toward Lake Peak. It was at this time I looked back at my new friend Kurt McKay in time to see his eyes roll back lazily even while he

was still walking normally; I was the only one close enough to see this. Then I heard the voice of Canada in my head say, "Run, he is not himself if he catches up to you he will kill you." Just then Kurt reached down and picked up a medium sized rock with a jagged edge. I started running with all the energy left in me. As I began to lose hope I heard Canada again. "If you make it to Lake Peak he will return to normal." I ran and ran. A few people I ran past said "man, you are excited to get to the next peak!" I just smiled and said "Yep." Finally I made it and Kurt just came up smiling without a rock and his eyes had returned to normal. Lake Peak was like a giant pile of rocks and you can see Puffer Lake like a beautiful mere from the top. After we summited the last peak we headed down and slept by the cabin we had passed at the beginning of our hike.

In the morning we headed back to base camp and helped finish setting up the C.O.P.E. course outpost. At the end of the week we had a staff meeting and realized we had gotten to know each other really well. The Sunday before any of the scouts came we had church out on a cliff at a very special place called Chapel Rock. That night I went to sleep in my tent and had the same dream I had dreamed in the past. I was in a forest where there were many large and beautiful trees. I saw a house built under the great roots of a giant tree. I went in and saw the same lady I had talked to before. This time she told me that Beaver was a very sacred place and that someday I would know why. Then she told me about the Meta. She explained that it is a realm of the mind and said that we all had our own worlds of the mind and that depending on what we allow dwell there depended on whether we were of the world or not. She explained how all things are created mentally before they are ever spiritual and then finally physical. In order to create something one must first think of it. She also said that the worlds and planes of existence go on forever. She told me that my organization was the start of something great; and that I must always seek for the Truth no matter what the overmind might do to stop me. Then I awoke.

When Hans had taken the last group of scouts back to base camp he went back to his tent and sat on his bunk to shoot the breeze with his tent mates as the sun went down. Once the sun had gone down and it was dark Hans decided to head outside for some fresh air. He stood outside with the light of lanterns behind him looking west into the darkness that hung over the meadow. Right then the lantern light on the ground all around him seemed to change color. It was becoming cold and gray colored. He could not hear his friends talking anymore either. This made him look back towards the tent. To his horror he saw that they were not moving. They looked like statues and their skin was pale and seemed to glow with an eerie blue color. At that moment he felt a presence behind him and he turned around to find an archway with a spectral robed being floating there standing guard with a lantern glowing with the blue light he had seen reflected on the features of his friends. The most frightening thing was not the robed figure, but what he was guarding. Behind him there was real and perfect dark blackness where the world seemed to end. The meadow was gone, perfectly replaced by the

darkness of the unknown. At that moment Hans's heart seemed to roar like a great lion. His whole being became animated by the most extreme bravery and he had an impulse to run past the floating robed figure and into the emptiness beyond and would have done so, but the lantern light of the tent behind him became stronger and more yellow and cheering until the specter and his darkness melted away like a dream and he could hear his friends talking again.

When the last of the scouts had left the mountain I called mom and she said she would come and get me when she got a chance. Soon I was alone with the last two members of staff: Chris and Misty. A group of adults came up to do the cope course for company solidarity and so we ran them through it. Misty and I did the giants ladder and had lots of fun. Afterwards we took down the C.O.P.E. outpost all by ourselves. When all the work was done on Thursday I decided I wanted to do three peaks again all by myself, so I took a radio and headed out. Chris and Misty had decided to go out on the four wheelers that day as I did three peaks. I hiked Delano backwards and it was very hard. I called on the radio to see if Chris and Misty were back, but it had somehow died. A huge billowing cloud rose up before me and it started hailing big balls of ice on my head. I went on to Holly and looked out over the canyon so far below and the strangest thing happened. As I was standing there next to the cliff I heard a foul voice on the wind. I tried hard to listen to what it was saying and the voice became clear; it tempted me to jump. The voice was almost hypnotic yet I could tell it was evil. It scared me so much that I left the side of the cliff. I started to hike down and came to where the glacier used to be early in the season and up again to Lake Peak. On my way back down the ATV trail the sun was setting and I got Tendonitis in my ankles for the first time and it was excruciating. I finally made it back and collapsed on my new bed in the lodge. After a few days had passed my brother Ben and his girl friend Clarissa came and asked why I was still there. I told them that mom had forgotten about me. So they took me back up to Provo. When I walked into the house my mother acted as if she was not the person who was supposed to go get me and remarked how I was back so soon! The Next Day I went to Will's house.

Will opened the door before I even got to the porch. Soon Andrew and Steve came over and once we were all together we decided to go on an adventure. We headed down to a medical lab facility on a hill overlooking the valley that is on rock canyon dr. As we walked in the courtyard there we found a triangle shaped flowerbed. There were four little yellow flower plants in the circle. We sat down in the triangle and meditated. This time we all sat in a different spot. The circle was turned one place counter clockwise with me in the east and Will on the west. Andrew asked what the meaning of all this was. I explained to them that the triangle represented the three different parts of ourselves which is the Mind, Spirit and Body. Will explained that the circle in the center represented all of us as a whole and our eternal nature. Then Andrew added that the flowers must represent each of us.

Will and I told Andrew and Steve that the Overmind had now appeared in our dimension and that from now on we had to be a lot more careful and more secretive. When we got up we walked over to an orb shaped window. Will looked up at the window in horror told us to run. I looked up also saw an ominous eye in the window. We ran and in no time two orange jeeps came peeling around the corner. We ran back through the buildings than into the parking lot and across the street. I looked back to see two figures that looked like agents of the overmind emerging from the buildings. We did not stop running till we had reached the school grounds. Near the end of August we all met at Will's house and made shirts for all the Canadians. On the front was a circle and triangle and on the back were three secret words that were all bunched together in code form. The three words was the name of our secret organization. Every night I would run home from Will's house very late bare foot and avoiding cars on my way. One day Andrew said there was this girl he liked that he talked to during seminary and he wanted to convert her to Canadianism. So we went to her house and tried explaining it. Steve came up with this allegory about being animals in the forest and finding a cottage with food and shelter but instead we decided to stay in the rain and in so doing we have found the truth that the cottage just makes fat lazy animals. She rejected Canadianism however and stopped talking to Andrew. That night Andrew jumped into his bed but to his horror there was a picture in the paint on his ceiling he had never seen before. It was a picture of the Overmind's face laughing at him. I went to Will's house and Monte was there again. We listened to his music and hung out. After a few hours Will said, "Hey, let's call up all the Canadians and do something". So we did and Andrew and Steve showed up together. We walked up to Steve's house and gathered behind Steve's house. We hiked over lots of hills until we got in the gully under a large hill that rises above the houses in the neighborhood there. We hiked through the gully until we came to another hill with a gazebo.

We walked up to the top of the hill to the gazebo. When we got to the top we realized that the gazebo that was the shape of an octagon. Up at the gazebo we watched as the sun set began. As we all sat there we told Monte all about Canadianism. When we told him about the Meta he got really exited and said he had a dream world called Moe's world. Than Will asked me "Is there a Meta of dreams?" I said that I believed there was. Monte told us all about it and some of the places sounded kind of familiar. We asked Monte if he would join us in our search for truth and join our organization. He said "Well aren't I already a Canadian?" Will and I looked at each other as though he didn't understand the commitment. Then Will shrugged his shoulders and we let his happy go luckiness fly. Once we got back to the school grounds we ran past all the sprinklers in the soccer field just across the street from Will's house. Before we crossed the street we decided to meditate there on the sidewalk in front of Timpview.

Just as we were beginning to meditate a Jeep came toward us peeling down the street. As it came closer we saw it was full of high school students with shaven heads. When they saw

us one yelled "Playing Magic?" And they started throwing water balloons. Miraculously none hit us, and Will caught one. Then from a distance we saw more jeeps coming so we all decided to run into Will's house not knowing what was next. Everyone went home including Monte and Will and I were alone in his house. We then agreed that we didn't want to concede defeat with the forces outside. I got the idea that we should take some chalk and draw something magical on the side walk where we were meditating. Will thought that this was a good idea so we got some chalk and went out there and started writing about how evil the overmind was and all kinds of magical symbols in circles. Every few minutes another police officer would show up and we would hide, but we were never caught.

Monte

This is the day I was fellowshipped in the league of Veritans. I was sitting at Will's kitchen table one afternoon, I guess I was waiting for Scott to finish writing some code for a program he was writing, when Hans, Will Steve, and Andrew came to me. they told me that they had something important to discuss. I was bored and so I was relieved to have some company come rescue me from the mundane. We took some paths through the foothills of Provo behind Steve's house until we came upon a gazebo on the top of a hill, and when i arrived we all gathered in the gazebo, and talked for a while. then everyone left, but Hans stayed behind and asked me an interesting question. He asked me, whether I would believe if he told me that he had been to another dimension. And I said, yes, I would, and he looked at me and said "interesting..." he said with a smirk of interest, and then he walked over to the others and talked with them for a while, and then they came back to me and they said, we want you to join us in Canadianism. And I was reluctant, I asked "What is it? is it some kind of religion?" and they said no it's not. and I said "Ok what is it then?" They told me they were on a pursuit of higher consciousness, and that the meta was the gateway between human consciousness. and I said I believe that we are all connected by our dreams, and that I have seen a world in my dreams that I call Moe's World. After I learned what it was all about, I was excited for thier cause and being ever so believing, they fellowshipped me and I was now a Canadian.

One afternoon when I was conversing with Hans and Will, I felt a force come over me as if it had entered my body, I do remember having full control over myself, but it was like it was communicating to me. I was talking with Will and Hans at the kitchen table, and in this state of mind I began to describe something and I was so focused on the vision that I began to draw what I was seeing. I drew a great Mountain, that was like a great spike with 2 narrow points, one ascending slightly higher than the other, and I started to talk of a great prison that was within the Mountain, and the presence told me it's name was Perfervenherbn. Atop the twin peaks was an alter where I believed that a great and evil man would take one of the inhabitants of the prison, and sacrifice him to the devil for the sake of some dark oath that was made over



several millenia ago. The voice also told me that all mankind has been in this prison at one point, and that only those who have ascended have been able to escape, and that there were escapees now coming from outside the prison returning into the tunnels under the earth to set free other souls from ignorance and death. I described the scenery in vivid detail, finding that Will and Hans already knew of what I spoke chilled me to the bone, and it was then that I knew it was more than just a game, and at that point I felt the presence leave me, and that's when Hans left from the table.

Hans

When school started again Will and I gathered the Canadians together in the lunchroom and had a meeting. We told them that we felt the overmind was upping his offensive and that if they didn't keep up their progression in states of mind and grow towards greater power they would be swept under by his mighty fist. That night we went on several small adventures around town and found that there are many dimensions that overlap our own. Once we found these other dimensions we began traveling to these areas to find places where the power of the overmind was not so great. This worked very well for a time, but a few days later as we ran to a place in another dimension a gatekeeper of the overmind would appear.

During one such little adventure one night we were heading past the seminary building when all of a sudden we all heard ringing in our ears. It was like the ringing you hear when everything is perfectly silent but it was coming from the direction of the hills behind Steve's house. Will had an idea; he said he would use trigonometry to find out exactly where it was coming from. We all pointed in the direction from which we heard the ringing and Will made a chalk mark on the sidewalk and then we walked up the road a bit and did the same thing. Will made his calculations by measuring the distance between the two points. After he had worked out the formula on a piece of paper he found that the place was less than a mile away. It actually wasn't far at all, only about a half of a mile. So we started walking and jumping fences until we came to the tall hill we had walked past to get to the gazebo right before school had started. We decided to call this hill Genghis Khan's memorial. This was because the hill looked a lot like a huge burial mound out of the stories of the past. This hill seemed like a fitting symbol of our struggle against the overmind. Once we had reached the flat summit of the hill overlooking the valley we heard ringing again, but this time more faint and far away. It was coming from a north western direction. Will did the same calculations by measuring the diameter of the top of the hill. The origin of this other sound was a lot further away this time being over thirty miles so we went back to Will's house.

A few days later Steve came up with the idea to make a secret newsletter we could spread around the school. That Friday afternoon we started typing it up at Steve's house. It talked about what we believed the flaws of the high school system to be and about how the

spirit of Timpview high school and the surrounding community was spreading ignorance. We also talked about the comfort zone that Americans had slipped into making them slovenly and unadventurous. In the newsletter we asked the reader questions like, "Why do you think it is the disposition of man to destroy or belittle artistic things?" We also asked, "Why are people afraid of truth; are they afraid of what they will find there?" We put this newsletter up all over the school early Monday morning. By the end of the day it seemed to be a hit and people all over the school were talking about it. There were some jokesters balling it up and kicking it around like a soccer ball on the commons. For the Goths in the school the newsletter had struck a chord and they treated the copies that they snatched up like new scripture.

Then teachers started asking everyone if they knew who wrote it. We all denied knowing who had written it when we were asked and went on with our day. That afternoon there was an announcement over the PA system speakers that if anyone knew about it they were to come to the principal's office immediately or they would risk suspension. None of us went and it remained a humorous secret. The next week Steve came up with another brilliant idea. He said we should find the geekiest kid in the entire school and invite him to our table and he could even be the King for the week. So that is what we did and soon our table was overflowing with people until we had to steal other tables and make it bigger.

That fall Will moved away. During Will's going away party we were all at Steve's house and we decided to make a time capsule to bury. We decided to make a movie to put in it. The movie starts with the group listening to strange sitar music in front of a giant brown lion blanket, Will says "Post the Hans", and Scott then comes in carrying me and sets me up and every one salutes. After the first part Will says loads of random things then we all end up talking to our future selves. Will and his parents move to Texas and rent out their house. This was a blow to the Canadians at first and I especially missed him. One day when I was on my way to school I found I had the most miraculous power I could envision my self a little further down the sidewalk and then I would refocus my eyes and I would be a little further. At first I thought it was only a trick of the mind.

After a few days I started to wonder if I really had been transporting myself to a new place using my mind. In order to try out my theory I timed myself walking to school one morning without using any of my newfound magic. It took me a little over 15 minutes to arrive. The next day I timed myself while using the power of envisioning myself further as I traveled along the way. I was shocked to find that when I got to school my watch said that only 4 minutes had passed. The day after that I ran as fast as I could to school as fast as the power of my legs could carry me and arrived to school with a side ache. When I looked at my watch I found that 11 minutes had passed. I realized then that it was impossible for me to walk to Timpview in 4 minutes flat.

Monte

One afternoon I was walking with Hans between the school and his house, and he told me of a strange new power he had discovered. He told me that he had the ability to transport himself with the blink of his eyes. I was uncertain if I had believed him, but as I walked with him something inside me let it be as it was. When I walked with him I didn't really notice anything different, but sure enough we walked the whole distance in about 4 or 5 minutes. So I figured that he must have been carrying me along with him. I also found to my surprise that it was a frequent occurrence that if I would turn my back for just a couple seconds Hans would mysteriously vanish, and then when I turned around again, to look for him he was over 50 meters away. I was always curious as to why nobody else seemed to notice it.

Hans

Once Will got to Texas some men come over to his house one day and talk to his father about giving Will a job. Will is nervous because his father looks displeased when they come over. After they offer him a job there in his living room sitting on his couch Will tells them he will think about it. Once the men are leaving the family goes out to the porch to see them off. It is then that one of the men take Will aside far enough so that his parents will not hear that he will be killed if he does not take the job. Will is confused and terrified and stammers, "Why?" The man gives him a serious look and tells him, "We need to be sure that we have your support, otherwise the plan of the man on top will be disrupted." It is then that Will agrees to start work. At first he detests the intrusion, but at work he learns all kinds of fascinating things and when he gets his first paycheck there is enough money to buy whatever he wants. In the business he meets a man about his same age named Doug.

One day Doug decides he would rather die than continue as an agent hurting people. So he takes all his mother's medications to kill himself. Somehow he survives against all odds and is put in a mental hospital when he tells the doctors about his servitude to the Overmind. The doctors are sure that he has gone insane and decide to prescribe a potent mix of drugs that will start the following week. That Saturday he sees a girl in the recreation room that frightens him. She stares unrelentingly at him and is pale with jet black hair. She interests him though as he thought her quite beautiful. After a few moments of indecision he stands up from his checker game and walks across the room towards her even though the matron gives him a dirty look that continues with him across the room. When he gets closer to her he wonders if the orderlies will separate them, but they make no move so he asks the girl who she is. She doesn't answer the question, but starts to speak with conviction in a low whisper, "I have been waiting for you. You have to fight him you know, they are going to poison your head so you can't escape and go after him. Now that you know me we are getting outta here! Doug thinks it is humorous that the girl thinks that he knows her, but he likes the familiar way she talks to him.

He feels like he somehow knew her before. Soon he sees the orderlies coming to take him back to his room and they separate.

That night he wakes up when he feels someone kicking the foot of his bed. For just a moment he is afraid to look to see who it is because he thinks the other agents have come for him and will beat him to death there in his room. He hears a big sigh like someone is tired of waiting for him to get up so he looks to see who it is. To his surprise it is the girl from the recreation room! Evidently she is a master of escape because he cannot see how she got in there. She is looking at him with a self satisfied expression with a huge wad of gum in her mouth and bright red lipstick. She is wearing an unfastened straitjacket, and she is twirling a ring of keys on her finger. She walks over to his room door that is cracked open and they walk out into the dim hall. Soon they are heading through a dark laundry room and into a staff bathroom. She effortlessly hoists him up into a vent and after a few claustrophobic moments they drop down through a vent into the main reception area! In the few moments that Doug stood there brushing himself off she mercilessly trashes the office and then they walk out to freedom. Soon the two are standing in front of Will's dark house. They walk around to the back and the girl breaks into a basement window and shoves him inside and then whispers after him that she will see him again soon. Doug crept upstairs past his parents dark room to go talk to Will. Will is still awake reading in his dark room with a small desk lamp when Doug comes in like an angel of death. For an instant then Doug realized that Will might kill him and he is almost overcome with the desire to kill him before he can turn around.

Will could feel Doug's presence though and so looked back to see him standing there. Will is shocked to see that it is Doug because the other agents had told him that Doug was already dead. That day they were chuckling among themselves that the "Doc" had done it. Doug sat there on the end of his bed and quietly told him all about his experiences and how he knew that the Overmind had to be stopped. Overcome with everything that happened over the past few hours Doug broke down and started to sob that he had killed and enslaved people and that he would give what was left of his meager life to take the Overmind down.

Through the conversation Will had kept a blank expression on his face since he was afraid that this was a trick of the Overmind and that he had sent Doug to measure his loyalty, but when Doug had told him of his past sins he believed his story since agents most fear opening up their thoughts and feelings to their fellows because they take it as a sign of weakness. Will knew that if he tried to help Doug now that he would probably be killed, but he remembered all the great adventures he had with Hans before and agrees to fight the Overmind again. Right then Will saw his two sisters quietly come into the room. They had heard what Will and Doug were saying as they stood still in the hall. Will knew that one of them had a

crush on Doug and that they wouldn't tell anyone that he had been here. To his surprise they then tell him that they had started a small group that is devoted to resisting the Overmind.

Soon all four of the friends decide to go on an adventure to upset the plans of the Overmind before the sunrise. Soon they are heading in his sisters car toward the ranch where all the mail to the agents came from to see if they can find and fight the Overmind. Once they arrive they park down below the turn off in the shadow of a ditch. After walking across a field they find some dark brick buildings, but not much else. Once they venture past the dark buildings to their surprise they find a circle of pillars. Soon they are setting out a plan to magically debilitate the pillars. The work seems to take all night, but the darkness seems to last and last. Once they get back to the car they begin to see the first pink light of the sun and they realize that they have barely enough time to make a getaway. The day Will has a normal Sunday, but is nervously awaiting the repercussions of what they have done; would the Overmind know what he had done?

On Monday when he went into the office he found all of the agents in an uproar. The leader is yelling at two agents that he is sending outside. He barked, "find him and take care of it!" Will realizes that the Overmind is apparently very angry about the pillars. This frightens him very much because that night seemed more like a dream than anything. He now knew that his actions had a real effect. The drastic change of affairs also seemed to galvanize his desire to continue the work of resisting the Overmind. Will wondered how much they could do against the Overmind or what might happen next.

A few days later Will is walking through the park on his way home after dark. Suddenly Doug is standing there in the shadow of a tree. Doug excitedly tells Will about how he has reached state 26 and he has also retained his will somehow and can teleport and do many miracles. Then suddenly an agent shows up and points a wand at Doug's back. In that moment to Will's horror Doug's lifeless corpse falls into his arms. The agent then sneered "So you caught him; good job. Now call the cops and get them to haul his body off." Will feels like fighting the agent but hides his anger and pulls out his cell phone to call the police. After the police and agents left Will sat on the spot and cried over the death of his friend with many tears of bitterness. He decides not to go home then, but walk over to Doug's house where he tells Doug's family about the Overmind and Canadianism. Doug's family forgives him and they become forever friends.

Monte

In the latter part of the Month, when will had returned to Provo, I came into town to see Will being overwhelmed by the misfortune of Doug's death. I came to see him and his family, and Will's Mother invited me to go with them to visit Doug's Grave in Brigham City. It was there

where I witnessed the tomb and when I saw the portrait of Doug on the tomb stone I knew his face. it was then that I realized that He was certainly the one that I saw in Moze Werlt and that I taught him how to use Buzz. I didn't remember clearly all the details of the dream, but his face was so vivid to me that I recalled it immediately. Later I found out that when I had this dream, I had learned a song from him. A song to this day I remember clearly, and I have written 4 revisions of the piece, which still remains Andrew's Favorite. Later on that week, I began a second revision of the song in Buzz, and I worked on it for over an hour. I was at Will's house and Will was in there. After hearing the song a number of times he became very emotional because he was still grieving, but I didn't know any better, So I went to calm him down. When I arrived in Will's room I found him there weeping, At the Time I wasn't really very sensitive I regret that I did not do more for him to find out what was going on. I told him it was ok, and that it was just a song. In the back of my mind I felt there was more to it than that. To Will it seemed to be more than that. After talking with Will a few more times over the next few weeks I came to discover that "The Promised Land" was Doug's song and that he taught it to me while I was in the Center where all human thought merges. Today I have the Anthem boldly standing as an anthem to ascension, and to honor he who was lost in the battle, our honored brother Doug. In memory of Doug. "The Promised Land" wherein is written the sacred virtues of devotion and loyalty and friendship.

## Chapter 7

### The Machine

Hans

The Monday before Christmas break I awoke feeling kind of funny. I looked outside to see the densest mist I had ever seen. I couldn't even see the front yard. I threw on my pack and headed out into the fog. For some reason the mist seemed dangerous so at first I tried to breathe softly under my coat. Soon I could not get enough air and began to hold my breath instead. Soon I could not hold my breath a moment longer and gasped for air. Instantly I felt weak and felt myself almost going into a trance. I went down in states of mind and my feet started moving by themselves. I fought for my consciousness and I took control of my own appendages again. I started running and I saw the pine trees shrouded in mist as I headed through the park. I had made it to school quickly using my teleportation power with most of my faculties still intact but still a little drowsy.

Once I was inside I felt better and boldly walked down the halls. Soon I realized something was wrong. I marveled at the fact that the halls were deathly silent. My first thought was that it was a president's birthday or something and there was no school, but as I turned the

corner there were a few kids in the hall. They were walking quietly without speaking to each other, which seemed odd, but I shrugged off the feeling and proceeded on. I had to climb up the steps to the second level for my first class. As I came up the steps I saw something I was not quite prepared for. The halls were completely filled with students just like a normal school day, but they all walked totally silent like a windless grave yard.

As they walked along they kept their eyes forward staring into space as though in some kind of hypnosis. You could hear a pin drop across the school if there was one. Soon I found the only sound I heard was the beating of my own heart and an awful doom a fear fell upon me! I decided to do a brave thing and break the silence. I said "Hello?" It was loud and echoed around the halls but no one even looked at me. I ran past all the melancholy people to my first class. I sat in my desk and looked at the teacher who was at her desk at the front of the room. She had picked up a sheet of paper and was reading it, but then I noticed that her pupils weren't moving at all. My blood ran cold as she suddenly resembled a corpse at a desk.

The students filed in silently and the teacher stood. The sound of the bell tore through the silence but no one flinched but me. The teacher slowly passed out work sheets and the students started doing them in a somewhat robotic fashion. All my classes were about the same. Lunch came and I was anxious to see Andrew and Steve. They were not like the other students they talked but seemed to be in somewhat of a state of depression. When I asked them about the mist they agreed it was strange. I asked them about the other students and to my horror they hadn't noticed anything out of the ordinary. I said don't you think it is a little strange our voices are echoing in this silent cafeteria. Andrew knitted his brow and retorted, "There is the clatter of silver ware". "Yeah, but what about the voices?", I asked. He replied that maybe everyone was just really busy with the break coming and all. Steve did agree with me that it was actually kind of weird, but he did not seem too concerned. At that moment I became convinced that this was the overminds doing. I was horrified at what the overmind was up to; and told them so.

Suddenly we saw a custodian coming straight for us and I said "let's book it". We hastily left the cafeteria. After school Steve and Andrew decided to go straight home and so did I. My family was actually not all that strange just about like Steve and Andrew and my little brother Danny said to me, "Hey Sam everyone sure was really busy today!" The next day nothing had improved. After school I related to Andrew and Steve that we had to find the source of the mist and they agreed. Andrew came up with an idea and said, "Hey Sam do you think it is that strange dark machine we found a little while ago?" I wasn't sure, and said, "I don't know but let's check there first considering it is so close". So we headed across the misty soccer field. When we got close to the machine to our horror we heard a funny noise and saw mist literally billowing out of the area of the top of the tower. When we saw this we held our breath and ran

back into the school. We were now sure it was the evil machine causing the mist. As we left to go back to our houses I told Steve and Andrew to go home and think of how we could stop the machine. The next day I went to school for another silent day.

This morning I actually heard a distant noise that was coming from a distant hall on the other side of the school and so I walked toward it. The sound led me to the Goth hall where the Goths always hang out. To my astonishment the Goths looked very depressed, but were quietly talking! I walked up to them and they looked at me warily at first and said "Hey dude you aren't one of the silent ones are you?" I told them I was not and they replied that they believed that this was all like a big conspiracy. They all seemed to agree that there was something out there in the mist that someone didn't want us to know about and one of them said, "They got everyone, like, brain washed, man. You aren't on their side are you?" "No I am like you", I said. "Hey do you remember the newsletter that everyone was all upset about?" "Yeah" I said. "Well it said something like this was going to happen. Oh hey, dude we are going to fight the system. I would come to school tomorrow if I were you." "Thanks for the advice", I said, and then went to my first class.

At lunch time I told Steve and Andrew what the Goths said and Steve had some exiting news. He related that he had found a found a place where there was no fog. "It's behind my house up on Genghis Khan's", he said. Andrew said, "Let's go there after school", and we all agreed. After the last period we headed out to Genghis Khan's. It was amazing, directly above the hill there was no mist and when we come out on top of the hill there was open air and you could look straight up through the cylinder of clear air and see the blue sky high above you. Suddenly a dog came running up to us happy as can be. He was brown with big white spots. I wondered aloud how we could use this hill to destroy the machine. Andrew came up with a brilliant Idea, he said, "Let's take some rocks and a piece of this burnt wood that is here and put it on the machine". Steve seemed skeptical and asked how that would help. We both explained that this would be taking a thing of light and putting it on a thing of darkness and perhaps that it would be enough to dispel it. We all agreed this was the best plan we had come up with yet so we took the items and walked to the edge of the hill and into the fog. The night had come and we rested at Steve's house with each of our magical items. When we felt that we were ready we ran down to Timpview in the pitch darkness.

As we headed through the soccer field we heard several cars pull up into the parking lot. We knew that these cars held agents of the overmind and so we ran faster. I looked back and heard tons of foot steps running towards us but saw no one. We booked it up to the machine. Steve hopped the fence surrounding the base of the tower and we handed him our items. He placed them on the machine and when the last item touched it the low hum suddenly stopped and the machine seemed to give out its dying breath as wind hit the air. Down below someone



shouted very angrily and so Andrew and I ran down the gravel path past the base ball field and crouched down in a shadow. We looked back to see a bald man in a black over coat run to the fence. Steve had jumped the fence on the other side and had run out into the misty football field. The man in black jumped the fence with ease as if he were a gymnast and ran into the fog. Andrew and I held our breath hoping that Steve would get away. We heard other voices as well so we snuck off as quietly as possible. We circled around and headed for Steve's house.

He was there and we were thrilled he was safe. We all went our separate ways and the next day I got up and looked outside to see a bright new day. Every one was cheerful and lively and as I walked into the school doors I heard the usual noise of tons of loud teenagers. The cops were there because they had heard that there was a bomb threat on the school, but most people didn't pay much attention. Apparently one of the Goths had been arrested and taken in for questioning in connection with the bomb threat. After school we headed to Steve's and jumped joyfully on his trampoline.

Monte

I remember a time when we went to check on the magical devices that were planted to deactivate the machine. I guess the Agents did not know or could not tell what it was we did that night. but they really wanted to find out, so they would watch that area intently. So a couple weeks after to this event we snuck out into the night as we had all been at will's house, and so we went over to the tower, and found that The Magical devices were still in tact. And the moment that we got there we examined the tower to see if it was still non-functional. We looked up to see if there was any mist coming out but this time to our horror we saw a red piercing light gleaming from the top of the tower. Andrew was upset about it because the device was planted up there to alert the agents that there was activity. We looked over across the field to the south and we saw the headlights of a jeep in the distant parking lot light up, and they started moving towards us. We knew it was the agents coming to find out our secret. We ran with all of our energy and escaped into the night.

Hans

Around January Hans heard a rumor from his friends that Will was coming back one day when he was unloading books from his locker. The news filled him up with hope that it would be true. After lunch he was heading to his next class. He came around the corner and saw the reflection of a schezaresque character in the buffed floor in front of the band room. Hans dropped his books and ran to Will and they embraced. Will's hair had grown long into dreads and his face held the vestiges of some conflict. Will told Hans that he would see him soon and that he had news of Orfacius. Soon that night all the friends were in a noisy gathering around the old glass table with pizza on the lazy Susan like a wheel of time. Will joked that he was

happy to be here because Orfacius almost had had his hide back in Texas. They all wanted to hear of his adventures.

Once everyone was done eating he spun a tale about how Orfacius was like a mafia don out in Texas and told them how he had infiltrated his organization. Before he had told them much about the old man plastic stars appeared in his hand as he captured their eyes like a magician and he spoke in dark tones telling them that they were magic items of real power. He ran to the door and told everyone he would show them what they could do. Everyone ran out into the night with each of their stars clenched in their fists. The agents in the neighborhood could be seen in a small group walking down the street a few blocks away and they chased Will and his friends into the park by the school. Once they reached the top of the hill Will took his star and placed it on his forehead where it stuck. Before the others had followed suit Will had started to fade from their view as if he was becoming invisible but as soon as they had placed their own stars to their forehead they could see him clearly again. They looked for the agents but they seemed lost in a mist near the base of the hill. Though the friends could see the agents wandering nearby the agents could not see them.

The friends ran unseen through the night until they could hardly feel the ground beneath their feet. Soon they found themselves in a magical meadow beneath a bright starry sky. They had never seen the place before and they knew that they had reached another dimension. They danced in the starlight, frolicked, and played laughing until they collapsed into soft grass. When they headed home they wandered in hills that seemed to be in a huge expanse until they found familiar trails beneath their feet and found themselves back at Will's house. The next night all the friends gathered again at Will's house to go on an adventure again. Will took them out into his backyard and explained to them that through his magic Orfacius had ways to attain to great strength, speed, and skill. He showed them how easy it was by eating what appeared to be gum and then running with super speed across the yard and jumping right over the fence! The friends all raced through the side yard and into the street to see Will there smiling. He gave them each a piece of gum and they ran together through the streets and up into the hills practically flying over any fence or stone that stood in their way. The agents had begun chasing them again just like the night before but they had soon receded from view. Hans was especially astounded at his new found strength. They played running games flying pell-mell around the hills above the town, but after a while they felt their legs running slower and slower until they headed back down the slopes toward town. Everyone was scattered along the path heading back.

Will and Hans were walking together without any of the others near the high school. Hans talked to Will about how amazing it had been to have such physical strength when usually he finds it so hard to move with great speed. Will stopped and asked his Hans a question that

he had wondered about ever since he had first heard of programs. He asked, "If you could have permanent strength would you do it?" He needed to know if he should try and find something that could cure his friend of his physical ailments, but something had always stopped Will. Now Hans answered that his physical bonds were his lot in life and that he would abide by their laws instead of seeking to circumvent them. Will had been desperate to show his friends the truth of Canadianism and of the Overmind, but his eagerness had taken its toll on his options- he now had no more programs to ensure his survival if Orfacius found out that he was no longer an agent. Will's luck had not run out yet though. The Overmind had not heard of his latest exploits and still thought him in his care.

Soon Will was contacted by the Overmind through a secret cabal and heard that he was sending someone to give him more programs. The night was overcast and dark and only Will was home with Hans. He instructed Hans to go into his room upstairs and turn out the light and stay there. Will walked out into the front yard and was soon met by a vehicle that drove up his quiet street. Hans could see that there were several men inside. A shadowy figure got out and walked right up to Will and exchanged a secret sign. Hans could not see the secret signs that they used because Will had his back turned to the window. Soon the man had left and Will came back inside with a box filled with programs that Will jokingly called a "lunchbox". One night Will and Hans are alone again at his house. The evening is coming on but they do not bother to turn on any lights. When the room is completely dark there is a knock at the door! Will goes to answer the door and Hans hears a strange voice of the person Will is talking to. Soon a short figure runs past the window and the visitor is gone. Hans is curious and asks Will who had come, Will answers that, "It was a midget at the door with his face covered! He said that Ti At Ta Cooshiwa is coming, whatever that means! Will's outburst would have been quite funny if he did not look so visibly shaken. Will seems like he wants to change the subject and just brush off the strange encounter when Will looks at Hans. They give each other a knowing look and realize with a sense of foreboding that something bad is coming.

They start to hurry around the house locking each window and door. When they finish Will starts to comment that no one can get in, when his words are interrupted by the sound of the basement window opening. The friends realize with a sinking feeling that they had forgotten to lock it. Will quietly grabs a stout cane by the front door as they hear the sound of lots of people entering the window downstairs. Will hands Hans a program and takes one himself as they stand by the stairs leading out of the basement and lie in wait for the intruders. Heavy footfalls sound on the stairs as the group of intruders run up towards Will and Hans at full speed. The leader cries out, "get the gum"; as he is struck full in the face by Will's stick and tumbles down the stairs on top of his fellows. Now the full import of the assault is clear and the battle is joined as an individual extricates himself from the tangle of black garbed assailants lying halfway down the stairs and runs up the stairs at full speed with a wicked looking blade in

his hand. He reaches the top only to meet Will and the crushing force of his program-strengthened grip. Will flings him up against the wall and would have hurled him down the stairs as the blade sings past his face just barely missing him. He grabs the attacker's blade hand and disarms him by nearly breaking his hand against the wall. Hans tries to see around them to try and check any more intruders from coming up the stairs only to be flung back into the main hall by a large man wielding a club. Both Hans and the intruder are surprised at their collision though and Hans wraps the man's arm in his sinuous program-inspired grip before the intruder has a chance to place a blow with his club. The club is hurled away before the attacker can cry out as his forearm bones compress and grind together near breaking. Will and Hans seem to have the advantage as the two men they are grappling with fill the hall and the others cannot enter from the stairs when a much smaller thin man ducks under the flailing arms of the man Will is fighting and quickly jumps at Hans wrapping his throat in a crushing grip with his long fingers. Hans cannot budge the man that is choking him as the large man starts to struggle with all his might to get free. Hans feels himself stepping backward out of the hall and into the living room as his vision dims and he knows that he will soon pass out when uses his last bit of strength to slam the thin mans head into the flagstone of the wall and breaks free. While the thin man rolls stunned on the ground Hans turns on the large man who is winding up to strike him and hurls him back into the hall and hears his head slam with a thud against the base of the door.

By this time three attackers are all fighting with Will and Hans hurls one into the kitchen as several more rush into the hall from the stairs. Two of the assailants attack Hans at once but he makes a fist and strikes one so hard that the man is hurled back into a man that is attacking Will and both fall senseless to the floor. In a final wave of fury the attackers Will has been throwing on the floor as well regroup and attack making Will stagger back near Hans. To catch his balance Will grabs one of the assailants and they both fall into a heap on the floor when the man that Hans had struck to the ground gets back up and calls off the attack with a great yell, "It is no use; they have programs!" Soon the front door as been flung wide and the attackers begin to flee. Hans runs to the door to see where they are going while at the same moment the attacker Will has in his grip breaks free and runs toward the open door framed by Hans's thin form. As he runs past Hans he grabs his black hood and holds him tight. The attacker almost falls back on to the ground, but keeps pushing his way forward until he is on the porch steps and uses his heavy body weight to drag Hans down the steps and onto the grass where Hans wraps his arms and legs around him and checks his advance. By this time Will had gotten up and went to the door. To Will's surprise a white van with real ninjas inside roars up to the curb and the attackers dart straight for it and it roars away leaving the attacker Hans is holding on the ground. When Will sees the two struggling he bounds down the steps and grips the attacker from behind and strips off his mask with a deft movement. To Hans's and Wills surprise it is

their friend Patrick. It is only then that the attackers start to seem familiar. It was their friends that had attacked them! They look into Patrick's eyes and he does not seem to be himself.

Hans is so shocked he lets go of Patrick and he gets up and starts moving slowly to the street. His usual sardonic grin has been replaced by a vacuous expression and he is muttering something unintelligible. Will follows him across the grass asking, "Why, Patrick? Why did you attack us?" He grows insistent while Patrick hangs his head and won't look directly at Will. Will at first seems to not know what to do, but after a while puts his hand on Patrick's shoulder. At this point Patrick jumps as if jolted by Will's touch and starts to walk across the street. Will follows him and calls his name. On the other side of the street Patrick stops and looks at Will. Hans can see Will explaining something to him, but Patrick's face twists up into a very angry expression and he screams at the top of his voice, "I don't believe you!" Then Jon Fairbanks car comes up the street, picks up Patrick, and drives off.

The snow is melted and the first flowers are coming out when Hans is walking to school with the morning sun glowing warm on the back of his neck. He looks up from the pavement to see three large orange daffodils in one of the yards. They are so bright in the morning sun that he feels like the sun is glowing through him in both directions. With a smile he continues toward school. When Hans is walking home from school he sees the daffodils again. This time he realizes with a start that they are in a different yard! They are closer to the school this time. He walks up to the flowers and crouches down to see them there. After looking at them he stands up to walk away, but then sees them a block away up a side street! Hans is now very interested and decides to follow wherever the flowers are.

Once he walks up the side street to where they are he looks up at the hill above him to see them there on the crest of the hill! Soon Hans is huffing and puffing up the hill and as he crests the hill he sees a small glade of trees. When he goes into the shadow of the trees he sees a strange temple of junk. He sees there a mailbox on the heap of junk. Hanging on the mailbox is a frame of burnished metal. This is the only bright and openly visible thing that Hans sees and he knows he has been led here to take away this thing. As he lifts it off its perch a momentary doubt flashes past his mind. Would he know how to use the frame? As soon as this thought dies away he awoke from his thoughts with a start to see he was looking right through the frame. He can see the world as it really is. He can see the power of the growth of the trees and their endurance that weathers the storms and the life in the soil where he stood.

That night he dreamed he was in Canada's garden. He found Canada on the path smiling and welcoming him. Canada told him that he needed an item of power. She said, "may this piece of life sustain you!" At that moment she plucked off a branch above her head and put it in Hans's clutching arms. Hans could feel himself waking up and coming back to his bed when he heard Canada's voice calling after him, "this is your wand, use it well!" He woke to find the

wand that Canada had given him lying next to his bed just as he had seen it in his dream. The next morning Hans ran to Will's house with his new treasures. They looked in wonder through the window at Will's house and saw auras and energy walkers in his house. When Hans has looked through the window long enough he begins to realize how dimensions work and how they fit together. Then at that moment Hans knew that he could advance without his friends and become a strong magus without their help. Right then he heard Canada's words in his mind, "no one has become great without helping the helpless, stay with your friends and help them, even though you may have the power to transcend worlds". That night Hans ate dinner at Will's and then the two friends go to Steven Gashler's birthday party. Hans and Will with Steve's other friends have rehearsed it because it is a sort of show. About 30 people from school have been invited to share the strange party. Soon they are on their way back to Will's house walking past the school when they see a strange sight!

On the front yard of the school is a huge bazaar filled with tons of old and interesting stuff. A few old lamps are sitting among the knick knacks and are burning with a golden light just as if they were sitting next to an old chair in a house! Standing in the bazaar are two young men in robes. They have shaven heads, but contented and happy faces. One is holding a homemade sign that says, "yard sale". Will and Hans go over to them among the mounds of distinctive bric-a-brac and Will asks in a dull and congested voice, "What are you selling?" With an expansive gesture one of the men motions towards stuff and says, "Magical stuff". Will and Hans are soon looking through all the stuff and wondering what it is all for as they try some of it. Will puts on a chrome-looking helmet and takes a nice deep breath. He realizes with a smile he no longer has hay-fever! One of the men smiles and says, "That helmet is for allergies". Hans asks what a large tea heater is for and they explain it makes things magical through powerful potion magic. The man explains, "It is really easy really, all you need to do is put the thing in the top and let bubble away for a while". Soon Will and Hans have decided on purchases of a few things including a trench coat (for protection) the potion maker and the helmet. They go to the men and ask how much the stuff is. They are shocked to find they want about \$3 for all of it. When Hans says, "that is a great price!" the men smile and say, "well it is a yard sale".

One day Hans is in the Bathroom washing his hands. When He turns around to dry them off he sees a ring on the windowsill. This ring seems to reach out to him and so Hans grabs it and slides it on to his picky finger. He looks at the ring every now and again that day and whenever he does he gets a feeling of a dark place deep in the earth. When he goes over to Will's house they sit in his basement and talk about the song Hans just composed on the computer.

The basement seems darker than usual. When Hans leaves to go home the sun has gone down to reveal a dark night without stars or moon. When he gets home he eats some leftover

lasagna in the kitchen. He does not bother to turn on the light and eats in the dark. When he is done he does not see anyone and so goes to bed. He rolls over and lies down on his face and falls into a deep sleep. He cannot feel, he cannot know. He has never seen light before for he forgets his place in the universe. All he knows is the darkness. It seems like he has been forever when it happens; a pain greater than cold liquid steel singing through your soul. The magi have come.

The next day he looks at the ring and finds a small dome that has formed in the black surface of the ring and he can feel the ring knowing what has happened. He wants the dream. He knows it means the end of darkness. He keeps the ring when his little brother starts to ask if anyone has seen it. That night he reenters the cavern; lives the thirst of another; the thirst of one who has never seen light. Every morning there is a new dome in the ring marking that he has reentered that place. Every night he follows the advice of the magi and never eats the stones, but wanders through the darkness in the weakness of hunger to the place where the forlorn are swallowed by the earth itself.

He goes on to where the people eat filth- the filth that destroys the earth even as it makes a mockery of it. He turns away and continues to hunger. Will he ever find his way? One day after school Hans is walking home when he sees the orange daffodils again. Soon the flowers have appeared in a handsome yard a block away. He keeps following where he sees the flowers until Hans finds himself in a neighborhood behind Steve's house. He is right in front of Genghis Khan's memorial that they used before to kill the machine the first time and he runs to the top. The summit of the hill is sunny and breezy. It seems like the perfect reminder that summer is coming. A few wispy clouds blow by in the sky and everything is perfectly peaceful as Hans lies down in the browning grass.

Then just as Hans feels comfortable enough to take a nap up there he hears the most profound buzzing sound he had ever heard! Then he saw it, at three or four inches long it was easily the largest bee he had ever seen! It was as orange as the flowers he had followed here and it was heading straight toward him! He started to cover his head in fright, but he heard the bee tell him in a calm voice to not be afraid. As if to answer his question the bee explained to Hans that he was really the spirit of Morgan that had come to this bee and allowed for it to grow to this incredible stature. He explains to Hans that he will be a magus that will lead others to overcome the influence of Orfacius.

At this point Morgan came closer to Hans's face and began to speak very gravely. He said, "You must be very careful before you are delivered from the overmind for he hungers to have you". Then Morgan led Hans to the brow of the far side of the hill and said, "Look to the north". Hans looked out towards the north and to his extreme surprise saw an evil tower machine just like the one back at the school! Then Morgan went on to say, "These machines

will cover the land. The only thing you can do is to learn, and teach others, to have a state of mind in which they cannot affect you." Then Morgan tells Hans, "remember to be strong and the age of the titans will come to counter the overmind." Then the mighty bee soared into the sky with a great buzzing sound and flew away.

Once Morgan had gone Hans ran back to tell his friends what had happened. After an hour or so Hans's friends get together and decide to run out to Genghis Khan's memorial. On the way they saw a dog running along. Steve and some of the other friends recognized this dog. They had given the dog the name magnificent Bill because he can run very fast. The friends sat on the hill and talked for hours. Soon they went to the base of the hill to head home when a black jeep wrangler roared up with two scary men inside. The friends immediately ran into the woods by the road, but not until they can see that one of the men has brandished a sawed off shotgun. As they scattered they heard the shotgun fire and then the man bellow into the trees, "don't let me catch you up on that hill again or I'll kill you!" Later that week the friends decide to go back to their magical meadow, but when they get there they realize they can still see the tower machine not far away and the meadow is the same as every other place in the city. They realize the power of Orfacius has reached their playground and they can no longer reach another dimension that way. Sadly the friends walk back home

## Chapter 8

### The Titans

Hans jumped in the van and sat next to his brother Adam. This year everyone was going down to see him off and his mom had borrowed a van. The road down was sunny and beautiful. In the back of the old van he tells his brother about what has been happening. Using his words: Will and I have found that most people do not know what is happening; there is an evil wizard that is attacking the people in the city. When we get up to Beaver I will show you the difference between places where he has influence and places where he has no power. I do not know why he had no power up in the mountains above Beaver- I think it may be a sacred spot." He went on to say that he had been doing battle with this being for the past year. After the van scrapes past the rough spots on the dirt road on the way to Beaver lodge the family spent some time saying goodbye and then left.

Soon Hans is standing in front of the lodge with his bags again. Shortly afterwards an old pickup roars up and a large man gets out with his two sons. The older son Hans knows from his time last year. He says hi and meets his little Brother that will be staying for the summer. His name was Spencer and he has an unhealthy nervous look about him. That night they all sit around the table and plan the staff week including the first 3 peaks hiking trip.



The day of the hike everyone milled about getting ready. The day was clear and windy at first, but as they head up the ridge a low overcast sky comes rolling in and seems to tear close by the tips of the pine trees. Soon Hans is ahead of the group and walking toward the old cabin when out of the trees he hears the shriek of a cougar. He stops dead in his tracks when he sees pieces of an animal ahead in the path. He knows he cannot make any sudden movements or look scared and so continues on his way past the spot.

As he turns onto the path at the base of the mountains he sees Butch running up to him with a comfortable grin. He tells Hans, "I thought you might like some company." Hans smiles and wonders if he can keep up with him this time. Soon they are heading up Delano- a group unto themselves silhouetted against the windy sky filled with shredding clouds. To Hans's surprise Butch stays right next to him in lockstep. They talk about how strange the day is and enjoy the peak of Delano before heading on together. The two friends soon slide down a hill of boulders onto the saddle between Delano and Holly and are walking across the expanse near the cliff when they stop dead in terror. There quivering before them and coming nearer is a small tornado. Hans feels his stomach turn over as he feels his body begin to lift upward into the path of the tornado and resigns himself to death just as he feels the jolting strength of two large hands as they grab him and hold him fluttering near the ground. As the wind tower passed into the abyss and passed from view Hans's body sinks with its full weight into the ground at Butch's feet. At that moment he realizes that Butch has saved his life and that he would have been thrown off the precipice if it had not been for his friends help. The two friends are quite shaken but they find themselves good natured and joking about the incident by the time they leave the peak of Holly.

In a few more steps they see the slopes of the immense glacier falling away before them. Hans decides to slide down the ice as it is his tradition each year. The thrill of going down the glacier turns into cold terror as Hans sees that the glacier has been melting early in the year. As he first puts his heels into the ice to try and stop himself he can see where the ice slides down to where a boulder stands in his path. Soon his feet reach out to meet the stone and stop his descent with a stinging shock. Butch had seen Hans almost hit the rock and runs up to Hans who is still laying there to congratulate him on his luck.

The rest of the hike is joyful for Hans as he realizes that he has survived two near misses and that he had lived. A few days later Hans is walking through strawberry flat with Spencer. As they head across the meadow this day Hans feels a strange breeze coming from near the edge of the trees. He takes a few steps closer and feels the breeze on his face. He can tell that there is something special and different near here, but does not know what, until he saw it. A large stump on the tree line is beckoning to him. To his surprise he sees door-walkers all over it except on top where there was an invisible mist column towering into the sky. Spencer at first

looked quizzically at Hans, who had stopped walking, but looks into the trees himself and becomes very quiet and respectful. He knows there is something there. Hans realizes that they need to go on to the climbing outpost and soon leaves with Spencer, but decides to come back soon.

The next day Hans decides to go to the stump even though there are many lowering clouds in the sky and it looks like it might rain. As he nears the stump he looks up at the stump only to see Spencer sitting there. He has a happy contented look on his face and looks like he is looking out at something like a vision has been opened to him. At that moment there is an opening in the clouds and a beam of sunlight pours down onto Spencer. Hans knows something wonderful is happening and merrily goes on his way. Finally Hans had a spare moment to go to the stump himself. Staff week had just barely ended and it had been hard work. As he comes and sits on the stump all his cares and tiredness seem to slip away and everything is perfectly peaceful. He finds he can meditate and contact the Meta very easily from this spot. Ever since Spencer had gone to the stump he had been much more powerful, happy and confident. Now Hans knows Spencer had probably contacted the Meta there or had been touched by the Magi even if he did not know it himself.

The first troop of scouts was not very happy. They looked strong but the uniform they decided on was just a plain orange shirt. They were always tearing each other down and no one knew why they decided to be together or had any unity. Soon Hans found out what they had in common. He was coming out of the trees onto strawberry flat one day when he heard them chanting strange words and coming toward him while they were making a huge racket banging on pots and pans. He retreated into the forest just like he felt all the other forest spirits around him doing. He went on through the woods to the lodge wondering what the strange troop of scouts was up to. On his way back to his tent a horrible feeling came over him and he felt himself start to run toward the vision stump. He could still hear their receding voices in the distance when he came to the stump and found in his horror that it had been defiled. Strong magic had banished the door-walkers on the stump and instead it was covered with spirals carved in blood. It looked as if the stump was cut and bleeding like the body of a human being. Hans felt cut off from its power and felt like he was standing at the edge of a gaping hole. He determined there that he would do more to halt the growth of the evil power of the overmind and then sadly walked away.

That night Hans is sitting near the fire after all his friends had gone to sleep when he hears a quiet sound coming out the fire. It is a voice speaking in a marvelous unknown language. The voice soon becomes louder and is almost as loud as a voice one uses when he is talking to someone close by. Hans is mystified, as soon as the voice stops speaking for a moment he asks, "Who are you?" The voice answered the quick reply, "I am Doug." This

reminds Hans of Will's friend in Texas named Doug that had died. He wondered aloud, "The one that died?" The voice then answers his thoughts quickly, "Yes." Now Hans wants to make sure and asks point blank, "you are the one who knew Will that died accidentally?" Then the voice vehemently shouted in a low voice, "No! I was murdered by the Overmind!" Hans continues, "Oh, why have you come?" To which he was answered, "I have come because you are close to the realization of the real world, when you have realized the real world you will have escaped the Overmind's influence. Then you will be free. Good luck my friend, fare thee well." At that the voice was gone and Hans was left alone to wonder at all the things he was learning about his future.

A few weeks later Hans goes out to the cliff looking out into Beaver Gorge. It is getting late and there is a beautiful sunset in the sky above him. Then all of a sudden he sees the first star appear in the sky right before his eyes and it happens! He realizes the real world. For the first time he understands the world as it really is. He realizes then that eventually he will know all truth and there is no power in any realm that can stop him.

Weeks later Hans was talking with CJ in his tent and telling him about the dream he had about the man in the mountain that was trying to get out. With a twinkle in his curious blue eyes CJ then asks, "Well did he ever get out of the Mountain?" Right then Hans realizes with shock that he does not know what happens to Han. Since those first few dreams he had seen Han walk through many caves and places. Han had even had a vision of the world outside, but Hans still did not know if he had ever run among the blue skies and green fields of the world outside. That night when he lies down to sleep he wonders about Han until he has forgotten himself in the darkness of sleep. He lives with Han again as he finds himself in the cursed caves. Many of the friends Han had taken with him had fallen in tragedy along the way, but finally the day comes when a single beam of golden, blinding light fills a cave near the surface and he feels the first breeze from the world outside. From that day on Han had faith no longer, but knew there was an outside.

Soon he had found the way out and had outwitted the guardians that would keep him from escape. He walked across the mighty lakebed and the green fields with the expanse of the sky above him filling him with joy. He went into the forest with trepidation. Would there be enemies there or would he see the woman in his vision? His spirits fall as he sees her green forest house empty, the door broken, the woman fled away. He looks away in sadness, his benefactor stolen away, only to find a wise man on the garden path. They live together gathering the fruits of the forest until the day comes when the mighty titans come looking for the student they will take away before the fall of the city nearby. With light comes darkness and in the night they evil ones come to murder and ruin. The old man fights for him with his magic, but falls even as the Titans take him away to dwell among the stars where he prepares

to avenge his friend in the last battle when the darkness of space is transformed into the light of life. Hans has lived as Han for many years when he opens his eyes with rejoicing in Beaver. The messengers of light have the victory even as some pass away, in this, and in all ages!

The day Hans gets back to Provo he runs to Will's house to tell him of the dream of the titans. The story of Han is unfolded for Will and Hans tells him how he knows that the Titans are real and working to help them succeed in warring against the Overmind. He says, "In Han's age the titans sailed through the heavens and even though that age is no more; the titans persist still in the starry expanse among the people of the city of Enoch, and more titans will come to take their place to struggle before the last battle when all will pass away!" Will smiles and wants to believe all like a little child before his school master, but doubts if all these things are symbolic only. Soon the evening becomes more familiar again when Monte comes over and they all start talking about movies, music they have composed when Hans was gone, and many other more normal things. They take a trip to the grocery to get some things for dinner and strange things start happening. As they walk down a solitary aisle the cans on the shelf behind them get knocked down on the ground. Monte makes a lot of the happening, but Hans and Will act as if that happens all the time; wondering themselves what it might mean. Soon they get back and later once the darkness descends on the warm day the friends decide to go out into the cool night and have an adventure without peer. The friends hurry outside and head toward the school. Soon they are walking across the football field next to the evil tower machine when they notice puddles of water in the field. To their surprise these puddles are underneath a great expanse of mist. Hans sees something that looks like the ship of the titans in the mist, and cries out, but the others cannot see it. The puddles are perfectly round and in a circle just like the titan pillars are in the dream Hans has of Han.

After continuing on their walk they head back to Will's house. Once they had arrived Monte sat down at the kitchen table and started to doodle while Will talked with him there. Hans is about to go inside the kitchen and sit down too when he turns around and sees a shadow in the hall mirror! He can tell right away that the being is good. The shadow looks like the wind titan to him. He tells Will to come over and stand by him and look. When he does Will can see the Wind Titan clearly and he can see that she is standing right next to him! A few weeks later Hans decides to go on a personal adventure. As he is walking along near the school he feels a presence of something in the football field and decides to go to have a look. To his horror there is a foul looking smoke-like mist coming out of the tower machine that begins to gather around the base of the machine and then grow in stature like a deformed monster. The monster was like a great immaterial giant standing over him. To his surprise Hans recognized that this must be the Overmind. He called out, "Overmind is that you?" As soon as he had spoken the evil mist flinched and began to shrink from him. A moment later Hans felt himself speak again and this time it was like a great battle cry, "I have seen the real world and I know

your lies! I will raise an army against you! An army of truth and light! When Hans had said this the mist began to flee from him back toward the tower machine. It rested on the bleachers propping itself up and Hans heard the cruel eerie laugh of the Overmind as it finally blew away and completely disappeared on the wind. Once Hans had watched the evil mist depart he walked on.

The Saturday right before school was to start Hans went over to Will's house to have a sleepover. When Hans had just barely arrived Will showed Hans a strange CD by a man with the last name of Orange. Will took his stereo outside so they could listen to the CD where they were camping outside on the trampoline. In the dying light Hans and Will look up into the sky. It is very still there in Will's yard, but the clouds are moving very fast high overhead. The clouds are strange. Will and Hans talk about the clouds and Hans says that the clouds passing over are cloud-cloaked ships. The two friends agree that the titans and the people of Enoch often come back to earth and do all sorts of things to combat evil.

That night once they fell asleep they fall into dream. Hans and Will find themselves in a clean city street near tall downtown buildings. The two friends decide to take a walk down the street and see what they can find. In front of one of the tallest buildings there is some nice grounds where Hans and Will stop to talk awhile. Right when they had sat down at a Bench a man walked past them hurriedly, muttering, and lost in thought. He is strange and gangly and has a long trench coat on. This is the first person they have seen in a world that is now quickly filling with people. There can now be heard sounds coming from the street, but Hans and Will know that they had not seen anyone until the man had walked past. They are intrigued and follow him into the building. Once they go inside they see a nice reception area with a few businessmen waiting in front of a large desk where a receptionist is talking on the phone. Everyone thinks that they are with the man who is hurrying past and so no one thinks it strange when they go into the corridor with him. The man walks into a nice looking lounge and then up a flight of stairs until he reaches two ornate (Chinese looking) double doors. When the man reaches these doors he rushes forward with a sweeping motion and opens the doors as he cries out (as is he is performing for some hidden audience), "Now introducing the greatest invention ever created!" Before the doors close the two friends are inside a large multi-story workshop with the man who has hurried away among the gargantuan forms and clutter there. Soon they hear the man clanging parts, dropping things (wrenches from his perch above that land flat and ringing), and singing strange songs to himself. The two friends don't really know what to do, but soon Will has plucked up the courage to ask a question, "So what are all these inventions?" At this the man peeks out from behind a huge steel sphere and says, "visitors! How wonderful! Let me show you everything!" Will and Hans now can see that the man is their friend Monte! He rushes up to them and makes them sit down on old wooden broken down chairs. He stands on his chair (that threatens to break) and he points up at all the inventions and breathlessly tells

them what everything is and all about how it is going to change the world. The next morning the two friends talk about the strange dream over waffles made by Will's mom.

One day Will, Dan, and Hans go on an adventure. That day there was billowing clouds blowing out all across a stormy sky. The three adventurers head out to the fields around the high school. There is strange marks that have been made in the grass. It looks like maintenance workers have been working on the sprinkler system somehow , but when they pause they can't find any reason to the pits that have been dug in the field. Dan looks down into one of the holes and sees a shiny metal cylinder sitting there. He is mystified and picks it up. When he does the wind kicks up and nearly blows over Hans and Will, but Dan is not blown around at all. He notices that the wind will eddy based on where he points the metal rod. He then notices that there is a top part that he can twist. He points the rod out in front of him and he tries it. To his amazement lightning strikes right where he had pointed the rod. He tries it again and again and it works every time until he starts to worry about damage he might be causing the neighborhood. Soon the friends continue the journey amazed at their adventures.

One night when Hans was dreaming he found himself back in the city he had visited with Will. The streets are filled with trash and it seems that something is very wrong. There are people rushing through the streets like they are trying to get away from something. Soon he hears a siren approaching and he goes out to stand on the curb to see what is happening and is almost bowled over by several people as everyone on the streets begin to run, quickly trying to get out of the street. Soon a military vehicle with a gun mounted on top comes around the corner with its sirens blaring. The vehicle is roaring through the streets and honking its horn at anyone that gets in its way as if it is looking for something. As the jeep is driving past Hans it suddenly slams on its brakes and comes to a stop a few yards away from him. The commanding officer stands up in the passenger seat, motions at Hans, and barks a quick command that Hans cannot fully make out. In moments two large guards have leaped out of the vehicle and dragged Hans handcuffed into the jeep.

Soon Hans is driven out of the city and he can see the jeep driving by hilly country on the outskirts of a large enclosure hemmed in by barbed wire and small hastily constructed guard towers. The sight surprises Hans who remembers seeing such places in history books. It is a concentration camp.

Hans is taken into a dark room and interrogated by a man in dark robes. He asks Hans what it is he can do. Hans is at a loss. The man becomes impatient and calls for the guards to come in and beat him up. As the guards come in menacingly Hans tells the man he will answer his questions, but he just did not understand. The man says so you can fly? You can throw force from your hands? ETC. Hans says yes, yes, and yes and even more! Those things are nothing! The man looks at Hans with terror as his eyes become wide and he quietly asks how Hans feels

about the “master” Hans breaks in, “You mean the over mind? I am against him! I will not rest until he is destroyed!” The man decides that he has heard enough and waves Hans away into a maximum security area. When Hans is thrown into his cell he realizes that this is a very strange place. It would seem that he had been placed into a prison for the criminally insane rather than just an internment camp. People sit glassy eyed rocking back and forth in cells made from rusting metal and housed without lighting in what seems to be an old warehouse.

After Hans had been there for what seemed like days he realized that the magic of the prison only made people believe that they could not use their powers. With a bit of trepidation Hans used his wall breaking power and ran straight at the wall without flinching and bashed right through! He called out with a loud voice, “they only make you believe that you can’t use your powers! Follow me!”

Soon he ran crashing through the large double doors at the far side of the building and everyone followed him running in a huge force of gleeful warriors now full of fury and ready to do battle. When Hans got outside he saw the prisoners running out in all directions attacking anyone with a uniform on they could find. Some throw power from their hands and others can throw people with super strength. Right in front of the building there was a jeep with a machine gun mounted on it. Hans jumped in the driver’s seat while more prisoners jumped on the back and manned the great gun. As the motor coughed into life Will came out of nowhere and jumped into the passenger seat next to him.

Soon the jeep was hurtling out the front gates. He saw some of his fellow prisoners jumping like strange creatures over the perimeter fence and others commandeering motorbikes and all sorts of vehicles. As they raced out onto the dirt roads of the country Hans began to see the beginning of a counterstrike. Biplanes streaked overhead and filled the ground around them with bullets beating the dust up into the sky. The machine gun behind Hans’s head coughed into life as they began shooting down the planes who soon streaked up above the clouds to regroup. Another jeep soon sped up behind them and they were not sure whether it was a friend or foe until it began to fire on them cracking the windshield and making Hans duck down in his seat. Soon their great gun was turned on them making the jeep quickly brake out of range, until they had fired the last round and the gun stood there smoking. Now the enemy jeep sped up and came after them in order to ram them off the road, but when the speeding jeep got too close one of the largest men Hans had ever seen jumped off the back of their jeep and onto the surface of their roaring hood. Soon he had bashed through their windshield with his bare hands and pulled the occupants screaming from the two front seats. Now Hans directed his gaze forward onto the road ahead, gunned the motor and drove on to freedom.

When Hans awoke he knew he had foiled some plan of the Overmind. He was puzzled though; why had the Overmind taken so many prisoners, and caused so much havoc? He was soon to find out.

A few nights later he fell into a deep dream state and went into the Meta. There he saw something that shocked him. He was back in the town and was going to the town square to some sort of rally that was going to be held. He was just entering the square and had heard someone beginning to speak on a stage when he felt an ominous presence silently move over him like it was brooding just overhead. To his astonishment with this horrible feeling that had come over him there was a great shadow that had rolled over the square blotting out the light of the sun. He turned to look and saw a floating mountain horrifically floating through the sky until it sat hovering in the air right above them. Hans knew it was a weapon of the Overmind. It hovered there dark, almost gleaming, and taller than it was wide. The bottom was uneven and seemed to reach out menacingly in great stalactites. He craned his neck to see better and thought he saw dark figures walking on the top. He wanted to look away to panic and run, but he could not tear his eyes away from the horrible thing. All of a sudden he broke out of his reverie and looked away from the floating mountain because someone had put his hand on his shoulder and asked him wonderingly, "whatever are you looking at?" Hans turned to look at the man, but barely glanced at him as he looked all over the crowd. To his utter astonishment he saw only a handful of people looking skyward and pointing. Everyone else seemed not to see the great mountain hovering there. A few feet away from Hans a woman exclaimed, "Wow, look at that cloud, I hope there is not going to be rain, which would break up the rally!" Hans realized then that only some people could see the floating mountain. He was consumed by a great desire to get away, out from under the great stone. He began pushing his way out of the rally towards the streets beyond. People gave him weird looks and some people acted as if they didn't want to move out of his way. He can see out of the corner of his eyes that people in regular clothes are moving towards him. The only way Hans can see out is straight ahead and he wills himself to move with great speed out of that street into alleys and roads beyond. When Hans slows down breathing heavily in an alley many blocks away he decides to see if anyone is still following him. There is a metal fire escape nearby and he jumps up to the first rung, hauls himself up and climbs the rungs to the top of a small several story apartment building to have a good vantage point. When he gets to the roof he can see in most directions that are not blocked by large office buildings and to his horror he can see floating mountains across the horizon as far as the eye can see.

Hans awoke with a start. He knew had to tell Will about this. He jumps out of bed and throws on his clothes and trots out the door into the warm summer air. His mom calls through the window if he would like some breakfast, but Hans tells her no thank you, but that he will be home from Will's house before it gets too late.



When Hans gets to Will's house he goes down into the basement to see Will holding the magical window out in front of him towards one of the windows. Will seems lost in thought, but Hans decides to break him out of his trance to tell him about his dream. When Hans calls his name Will does not look up or away from the window, but says "Hans! Just the man I wanted to see! Look at this!" With a blind hand Will drags Hans down beside him to the floor where he peers through the window still in Will's hand. When Hans looks into the window to his astonishment he can see walkers swarming over the wall of the basement marching outside. They pour rank upon rank in an orderly tide. After they look a minute longer the two friends talk about the dream that Hans had. A few days ago Will had been in the concentration camp too and since then they had been following the story quite closely in order to divine what the Overmind was up to. This latest turn of events makes Will look worried, he knits his brow in thought for a second before he jumps up all of a sudden and starts pacing the room. When he had made two lengths in front of Hans he suddenly says, "Well I say it's related", "What's related?" Hans shoots back. "The walkers and your dream, I say the walkers are escaping from this new danger". This idea intrigues Hans and soon the two friends take the window outside to see if they can prove this premise. Sure enough they look through the window and see that all the walkers are leaving the city. The wind kicks up and the sky becomes overcast as Hans and Will begin to have a great feeling of impending disaster.

That Monday the machine turned on for the second time and starts blowing large quantities of mist again. That day at school Hans, Will, and all their friends meet at lunch and decide to make war on the machine again. Will is especially excited since this will be the first time he has attacked the machine. They all decide the best plan is to put their most magical items on the machine. After school the friends hurry to Will's house where Hans and Will have all their magical items in a dresser drawer. After they grab the wand Canaata gave Hans, along with some of the old lady's relics they run outside and hurry across the street to the machine. As they are crossing the soccer field a car full of agents pulls into the parking lot. The group hides in the mist running past tons of junk in the soccer field like old shopping carts and things. Once they made it to the machine Hans clambers over the fence and puts the Window, Wand and Thing from the old lady on the base of the tower. The second the wood thing from the old lady touched it, it screamed and died again like before. The agents come up the hill and everyone runs. The mist is gone the next day and Hans sees the cell phone tower man over there looking at it. Even though the machine had been destroyed, Hans still knew that Orfacius had power over the world of men. To try and further counter his influence that same day he went on an adventure alone to the Medical center and found a new wand, received enlightenment, and entered into the real world again. He could see all the dimensions at once and the influence of each as they comprised the whole world and none of the machine's ideas clouded his mind. When he got to state 26 he suddenly appeared at Will's house where Will and Monte were meditating together. Hans stayed with them and told them many things.

One day Hans came over to Will's house and met one of Will's other friends. He was interested in all sorts of creative things. His name was Steven Stacy and he was incredulous as Hans and several of Will's other friends began to talk to him about Canadianism. Monte especially began talking about how he had a dream realm where there were places where he could do all sorts of things and even contact other people when they were asleep as well. Steve Stacy asked for evidence of this dream world and asked how it can affect the normal world. It seemed especially interesting to him that Will, Hans and Monte could talk to each other in their dreams. Will and Hans decided to help Monte conduct an experiment to prove that joint dreaming can happen. Monte thinks of a code and Hans and Will then have to figure it out while we are asleep. Sure enough the next day Will and Hans go back to Steve Stacy's house with the code written on two separate pieces of paper. When Steve Stacy opens each piece they say the same thing! After this Steve Stacy wanted more proof of Canadianism. That day all the friends were gathered together at the movie theater waiting in line to go inside. They had seven six sided dice there so Will told them that since he had a high state of mind he would call out what the dice would be before each roll. Strangely enough he did not call the dice as much as control the result. He called out, "all sixes!" each time for over five rolls. The result was so dramatic that soon other people in the line gathered around and looked in wonder at the goings on.

All of a sudden there is a knock at the screen door of Hans's new house. His family had just moved to a new house a block away from their old one. Hans's friend Andrew is at the door and he asks Hans if he wants to go on a journey. Hans grabs one more piece of pizza and tells his mom he is going out as he runs out the door. They head through the warm evening weather down towards the medical center. Once they get there Andrew gets quiet and Hans knows he wants to ask him about his meditation there. Hans and Andrew stop there a moment and meditate. After this they jump down into the forest. The glade had always been special to Andrew. He tells Hans that he had dreams about that place. In one dream Hans and all his friends are grown up and they gather in this spot to play instruments and play beautiful music. Andrew looks forward to this happening in the future. Soon they walked through the trees to find that one of their usual haunts is flooded. There was a pool of water there that had not been there before. The two friends waded through the water just for fun when they feel something strange with their toes. They are round pipes at the bottom of the pool. They lean into the water and bring them to the surface. They are small sections of PVC pipe. On a lark Andrew puts one to his lips speaks through it. When he does his voice is strangely magnified! His voice seems to ring over the fields and bounces off the hills. After their adventure in the water the friends walk through the trees exploring until they find a strange pathway that they had not seen before. As they follow its wanderings they find a clearing that has a very powerful feeling. In its center was a stone with many markings. They go to the stone and Andrew is drawn instantly to touch it. As his hand brushes its rough surface his eyes look out into space

and he begins to see the future. Soon Andrew stands and begins to tell Hans what he has seen. He says, "I name this place fort Canada; in times to come the Veritans will take this place as their home and stronghold. The forces of darkness will attack but will not triumph due to the power of this place."

That night amid boxes Hans lies in front of their new fireplace that his father has lit with a fire that envelops the dark room in a warm glow. Hans takes a quill and begins to write a great magical working. From his experiences in states of mind at the medical center he knew how to do so. He put his pen to the paper and created a spell of imprinting...

Hans took everyone on an adventure. On the way they found a stage and for the first time the Canadians heard the story of Expedition as Hans and Will theatrically preformed it. Andrew then leads the friends to Fort Canada. The rock was there that Hans had first seen with Andrew. Hans and Andrew notice that the symbols on it had changed! Everyone came forth to touch it; as they did they all saw visions of space. But Monte tried to pray to it and was chastised in his mind by a magus. In times to come he would not talk about it because he took it as a great sin for which he felt guilty for too long.

The bulge on the ring was complete. Hans had been crossing the front yard when suddenly he felt a horrible tugging sensation in his heart that was so painful he fell to the ground and tore up the grass all around. He could feel the death draw near as his spirit began to separate from his body. He felt a tranquil music drawing him closer from far away. Suddenly there was a shining stone right in front of him calling to him. He groped for it hoping to save his life. As soon as the stone was clenched in his hand Hans felt the pain in his chest stop, but in its place he felt an icy evil. He could feel the stone reaching into his mind and he felt someone there watching him from the stone. He then knew that it was an evil Titan stone. He thought of throwing it away, but he did not want to die. He could feel a desire to keep the stone growing in him. It seemed to call to him speaking of power and dominion. Hans could feel his will beginning to bend when he realized what was happening and a feeling of revulsion stabbed through him. Before Hans knew what to do he was running toward the Provo River. When he reached the riverside he threw the stone away into the water. As Hans did so he felt strange. The horrible pain in his chest did not come back, but he felt hollow inside and he could feel the effect of the stone begin to leave him. He felt a moment of panic as he stood there motionless for fear that as soon as he walked away from the river that he would die, but soon this sensation left him and he turned away leaving the evil stone behind. After he had walked for a few minutes he saw an embankment in front of him near the side of the road. A stone rolled down the hill and rested at his feet. When Hans picked it up he felt peace and could feel the life of the forest.

Later at Steve's Gashler's house there was a party and Hans told the other Veritans about what his experience. It is a masquerade party and it is hard to tell who is who. Three strange figures with frightening masks suddenly come through the doorway. The first one had a mask like a great bird and the other two masks like horrible demons. They bring Hans and a few others down to the basement where a strange tent like structure had been set up. There they give them a rite about the primordial secrets of creation and the secret of the worm of fear. They told them to go outside and as they do so they realize that they have gone into another dimension where there are many marvels. When they find their ways back to the party they have learned much, but the three figures are nowhere to be found.

Hans walked into the Lodge to go report to the camp director. As he entered he noticed one of the new staff members looking at him intently from the back of the room. He had dark hair and blue eyes. The director sat at the desk near the door and saw that Hans was looking at the group. The director looked over his reading glasses and said, "I bet you will like that group they are weird too and they are from East Carbon!"

That night Hans meets the strange kid from East Carbon that he found out was named Lance. Lance tells Hans right away, "I can see you are a wizard, you are in good company so am I!" He goes on to say "This is Winky"; who had just materialized at his side. Hans tells him how his family used to live in East Carbon and Lance listens in rapt attention before he tells Hans, "we are going to go meet the whole gang out at parking, you coming along?" They go together out to the cars and have we have stick fights; Winky gets hurt somehow. This becomes a tradition every week.

In the early morning sunshine Hans walks along the path shining with happiness. He was leading a large troop of scouts as they marched on into a canyon deep in the mountains. This year he led the group as head ranger. All was tranquility on the trail until he heard a strange human voice call out, "HEYah! Clear the way!" Soon a long line of horses were coming at them over the trail with a bunch of squinting cowboys complete with wide hats. The troop had to stand on the side and let them go past. It was part of the new horse trek program.

A few days later a storm blows into Beaver over the mountains and Hans knows that something evil is brewing. It is a girl's week when young women come from all over the state to enjoy the camp. As the lowering clouds blow in all the girls run into the lodge just as it starts hailing. The hail soon becomes the size of golf balls. Hans ran into the Lodge too and found hundreds of girls packed inside soaking wet and nursing heads that had been struck by hail. Hans and Lars, a large man from Salt Lake realize that they need to save equipment that was left outside in the staff area. They ran through the trees towards the spot. When they reached their tent they took in the scene with dismay. They could not store the gear away safely because the tent had collapsed. The two intrepid men dove under the tent cover attempting to

right it from the inside even as they took shelter from the hail that was now falling with ferocity. Once they were underneath the canvas everything started shaking. It seemed that something was hitting the tent that was much larger than the golf ball sized hail. Just as they had almost put the tent back up there was one huge crash and the whole tent came down on top of us. Now there seemed to be a crushing weight bearing down on them. For a few moments they were trapped and could not move. Suddenly an icy river about half a foot deep started running through the tent. Lars was luckily a very large man and managed to struggle free and lift up the canvas up just enough for Hans to crawl out and help free the tent from the hailstones so that they could try and right it again. As soon as Hans looked out he saw something unearthly moving about up in the trees and looked up to see a very strange, thin, and spindly man with very little clothing and strange grey skin jumping fantastically over the branches of trees. He seemed to be fleeing from something. Hans realized that this must be the hail Titan. Before he knew it Hans felt the rage of battle coming upon him and began yelling after the man. Before he could get up off of his hands and knees something huge whizzed by his head and splashed in a puddle spraying his face with icy mud. I looked at the hailstone and to his astonishment it was a piece of hail the size of a soft ball! Suddenly he was on his feet and he looked up when he heard the air being cut by another projectile and barely dodged another hailstone headed straight for his head. Suddenly the air was filled with huge hailstones as the man bounded back through the trees intent on killing Hans. Hans quickly jumped back into the icy river under the fallen tent to save his own life only to meet Lars face to face. He was puzzled, and sputtered, "What are you doing?" Hans began, "there are huge ice balls out there the size of softballs!" Lars continued, "But I haven't felt any hit the tent since I have begun standing up in here!" Lars looked at Hans and saw the fear there and they began righting the tent in wordless agreement. Once the tent was finally set up again they walked out and Hans showed Lars one of the stones. When Lars saw the hail stone and others like it sitting nearby he marveled at them.

That night Lance told him all about his superstitions. They had been lying on their bunks talking in their GP medium when Lance began to tell Han about the spirits that attend him. They go with him and tell him things including hidden things about the future. At that moment there was a sound outside the tent of a truck and trailer driving onto the meadow. Han and Lance decide to go see who it is. They walk out of the trees and see a white SUV with a horse trailer near the horse trek outpost across the meadow. They both thought that was odd. They go back to the tent and begin to sleep, but Hans keeps thinking about the trailer in the meadow. As soon as all the others are asleep he decides to cross the road and walk across the dark meadow to see what is happening. Hans feels that this arrival is probably not just happenstance. As he gets closer walking the expansive gloom he hears a strange thundering sound coming near him.

With a shock of realization he realizes it is a stampede of deer coming right for him. In the dark he is not sure, but he thinks that he is cut off from the trees. Hans begins to run in desperation straight toward the horse trek outpost that he had come to spy on. As the trailer and the trees beyond begin to loom close Hans becomes so winded that he is beginning to lose hope. When he begins to collapse in the tall grasses relief grips him as he hears the stampede sliding past him and thunder off into the dark. Suddenly a man gets out of the SUV and light arcs toward him into the darkness. To his surprise the man is thin and drawn, dressed in a baggy robe, and Wizard's hat! The man looks out across the meadow as if he can sense someone there his thin body taut as a drawn wire. After a few moments he turns and walks back behind the trailer. After a few moments Hans gets up and begins to walk back to his tent when suddenly sees an ominous shadow taller than the trees. Hans begins to run with all his might and soon reaches the tent, but hears a raspy breath from inside the tent. He can just seem to make out a hideous smooth head there in the pitch darkness. For a split second everything is quiet and time seems to stop until he is jolted back to reality by the voice of Canada that cries out for him to run. The next few moments are strange and dream-like as he propels himself away from the tent faster than he has ever run and into meadow where he sees nine deer strangely amplified by some wild magic and visible running with power in the darkness chasing the monstrous shadow he saw earlier. Soon the shadow is gone and Hans is left sitting in the meadow looking at the stars. He knows that a primal and unknown power has saved him. He feels safe and tranquil there for the mountain owns him even as it owns its very own.

## Chapter 9

### The Greatest Adventure

Soon after I arrived home that fall there was a huge fire on the side of the mountain above town. It took the fire crews several days to fight the fire and one night in the light of the fire we begin to tell Jon Fairbanks about Canadianism. Will then has a revelation that if Jon hadn't invited me to the table that February day three years before. Me and Jon would have been telling Will about Canadianism that night instead, since Jon lived next door to me for most of the time it would have been most likely that I would have told him about my weird experiences first before Will, but fate had changed it's course. Will also perceived that he would not have believed it and in this way it was better because Jon was different and had more of a chance to know the truth. Will and I felt the darkness growing. Will's dad told us about how things had gotten very perilous at his work because there was now many BYU professors who were agents. Andrew was gone on a family vacation and lately Steve Gashler seemed angry about something and did not want to have anything to do with us. Will and I knew that we were

alone and we made a pact that we would face the darkness together no matter what dangers would come.

That night I saw Morgan in my dreams. I felt so happy to see him. He told me that the good Titans would soon be restored to the earth but that the evil ones were already here; they were coming to kill me.

That next day I told my brother Adam that I was going to battle with the evil Titans and that I should probably not survive. I said goodbye to Mom and Dad knowing that I would probably not see them again in this life. And I walked to Will's house in solemnity. On the way I saw three evil Titan's come out of a house all in one body. The body was of a foot ball player that lived down the street from Will. But now he had a shaven head and a spiral painted on his forehead. I immediately hid in the bushes. I saw he had a pistol that he tucked in his pants. Then he started walking down the street but he didn't see me. After I safely got to Will's house, outside the night soon became snowy and silent. The snow fell and fell as Will and I sat in the kitchen waiting for the inevitable at any moment. Suddenly there was a knock at the door and we both jumped. We held up our wands and opened the door. But it was only my brother Adam. He told me he wanted to say good bye to me one last time if the battle was to go ill. We hugged and I tried to hold back tears as Adam gave me his magic staff. He said he thought it might be useful than said bye. Nothing seemed to happen that night so Will and I decided to go to sleep. Will slept up stairs and I down.

In the night I awoke suddenly to see moon light coming through the window, but then something blocked it with a shadow. It was a black personage outside of the Window. Suddenly the Window slid ever so slightly open by its own. The personage then flowed through the crack into the room. I realized it was made of cloth. It was a black robe hanging in the air. It pulled a long blade from its bowels and emanating from it seemed to be pure darkness. I heard a blood curdling scream from Will up stairs but I was unable to move though my shock. Soon the darkness filled the room until there was nothing but blackness around us. I heard the shadows whispering voice, it filled my head, pushing out my thoughts and filling me with dread. Before I lost my will to resist I reached for the staff that my brother Adam had given me. I could feel my hand closing around it, but as I pulled it towards me it became a sword of light. The battle was begun as the swords of light and darkness clashed against one another. I wondered if we would be able to fight in Will's basement, but I soon realized that we were elsewhere in a large open space open to the night sky. We fought until the struggle seemed to continue without me, like a dream that I was merely observing. On and on we fought, light against shadow, until I pushed at my nemesis with my last ounce of strength and his presence was driven back. Suddenly I seemed to be back in the basement where there was no longer any moonlight shining through

the window. From this I knew that I had fought the lord of shadows for the majority of that dark night.

I awoke early and went up to Will's room to see if he was still alive but he was in a deathly sleep. I decided that I wanted to see Mom and Dad again so I ran back to my house but foolishly left the book and staff there. The visit came to nothing because everyone was gone somewhere. Then I heard it, a foul hum that seemed to engulf everything. I realized it was the machine. It was turned back on and was now making an awfully resonant sound instead of visible mist. I ran back to Will's house and went in. There was no one in Will's room, but I heard someone down stairs so I went down. I found that Dave Holms and Will were in the weight room. Then I saw something in Will's eyes that I had never seen before. I saw pure contempt. I noticed that Dave was uncomfortable as if he was being held against his will. Will laughed and said, "Now you will die!" "Give me back the Book and staff" I demanded. He cried out, "No!" as he lunged at me in an effort to bring me to the ground. We engaged in combat throwing each other against the walls and weight equipment until suddenly Dave grabbed Will and I ran out the door. I went to Will's room and grabbed the book and staff and ran down the street. The humming of the machine was becoming unbearable. I saw Will's garage door open so I cut through yards to safety. On other streets I saw Will's car looking for me. It was there in the bushes that I looked up to Mt. Timpanogos to see a huge and violent storm covering the mountain. I could tell it was no ordinary storm but a battle. I then knew what I had to do; I had to destroy the machine one last time. I drew a magical rune on my hand. The storm was rolling down the mountain and I made my way to the machine right as the storm was coming over the roof of the high school. I looked back as I was climbing the fence to see the three faceless nothing Titans running across the field. One pulled out a large pistol and pointed it at me. Shots rang out as I let myself down over the fence right next to the machine where the hum was unbearable. The clouds of the storm covered everything with cloud and the sound of thunder sounded right as I put the staff to the machine. And I shouted to the sky, "I offer myself as the magical Item to kill this evil." I felt all the warmth of my body leave me through the staff. Suddenly I was being electrocuted. I shook and screamed in pain as I felt a countless amount of energy leaving and entering my body. I looked up in my agony to see a shaft of clear air open up to the blue sky like a giant tunnel straight up. And in that tunnel I saw the Titan ship leaving into space. As I blacked out I heard the voice of Canada say, "Sam we are leaving now and only two remain on the earth to restore all mental things. The heavens and the earth have touched in your age, and all things will be shortly given to man; Good bye my brother, my friend."

I awoke in the middle of the night. I was lying in the snow looking up at the stars. I suddenly realized that I was almost frozen to death. I was to the point to where the snow felt worm. So I got up and trudged home. The carpet in the living room burned my freezing feet. When I awoke the next morning I called Will and he was excited to hear I was okay. Will and I



talked about all the things that happened and we marveled that we were still alive. Will told me that night he had lost control of his body. When he had completely lost control his soul screamed out in a mournful voice without his body so it echoed inside of the most dreadful darkness where he could neither move nor speak.

A few days later I was home alone. The night had fallen and I sat in the living room in the green chair. Suddenly I looked up and saw an aura of an invisible man standing in front of me. He spoke to me saying, "I am Eloise. I shall give you the power to become a magi and administer all mental things." Then he pointed at my forehead and I felt his finger touch me and I felt power flow into me

A few days later Will and I went on a little adventure. We followed the Wind Titan where we heard her whispers as had happened a little before. Then Will stopped and held out his hand. He heard words which I did not. I saw his face light up as something was placed in his hand by the Wind herself. He then told me he had received the keys of Titanship and of recognizing his wife the new Wind Titan. "I now know for myself that your dream of the Titans is true." He said.

All ye ends of the earth lift up your ears and hear the news. I Hans Woodman and my best friend W C Stuart have received the gifts of Magicism and of Titanship to restore all mental and physical truths to the earth in this dispensation.

Copyright ©2011 by Hans Woodman

## Chapter 10

### My Mission

I then went on my mission. I have a mission journal that maybe we should add, if we are doing the whole story. The most remarkable story of which was when Billy Short was building his house and he told us he couldn't come to Church for the first time if it rained, because he would have a lot of work to do if it did. My companion suggested that we fast and pray that it not rain so Billy Short could come to Church and have his suspicions about how strange Mormons are put to rest. We did so but the rain clouds just kept building until it was obviously going to down pour. I realized the fasting and praying wasn't working, and so I secretly asked the Lightning and Water Titans to withhold for a day and it suddenly cleared up. Billy Short came to Church and got baptized only a month or two later. Another significant event was when I was in Boliver and Elder Nate Evens was my companion and there was a terrible

magnitude 5 tornado that ripped through the country side. It sounded like a roaring train and we tried to call the Sister Missionaries in Stockton and found out the lines were down. We traveled that way and found out that the Tornado had went right through the town, we were only not turned around because we showed our certificates of ministry and said we were there to help. I have never seen anything like it, there was a Semi truck that was literally shredded to pieces. There were buildings made into piles of brick, telephone pills and trees through houses. Some houses and buildings were still on fire. Grave stones sunk unto things like wrecking balls; cars in trees. Soon we had to get out and walk to find the sisters. We finally found out that they were safe and spent the next two weeks helping the towns people clean up. The last event was in Cassville when the branch president molested a kid, and I saw the true colors of the Church in trying to cover it up.

## Chapter 11

### Wing Chun

I returned from my mission and started living in your Basement. I also visited Missouri again and stayed with the James family in Cassville; they allowed me to have the quiet time I needed to write Voyage of the Titans. I had a good time with them and then returned. We started doing Wing Chun and this was probably my most favorite time of my whole life. We spent countless hours talking about meditative circles and other mysteries, and doing things in the shed. Davy Holms painted the Door Walker painting that I have in the shed and I went on an adventure with Andrew to recover the stone at fort Canada. Right after this is when Andrew was finally boved. We went to Wing Chun camp for several years with Master Heimbürger and had a good time around the fire and in the mountains; including the time we sat and listened to Heimbürger around the fire for the last time. We found the place at mount Vashal and I recorded the following account.

My fellow brothers in Veritanism, my talk today is on gratitude. This subject came to my mind when my brother and I were hiking in the mountains after Kung Fu camp. The mountains Baldy, Bellnap and others were towering over us in majesty and terrible beauty. The forest was all around us and we saw all kinds of flowers and life.

After a bit me and Adam ran out of water. We felt the first effects of heat exhaustion coming on. We were dehydrated, hot and dizzy. We began to go back as fast as we could but water was more than 12 miles away.

We made it to the top of the saddle between Baldy and a mountain covered in amazing rock pillars. There we were on the top of the world looking down over the millions of trees and rolling hills that made up the remaining 6 miles.

I admonished Adam to push on and not pass out or anything. He then turned to me and said. "This hike brings new meaning to Hann. He was in the same situation, when he came out of the mountain as we are, except we know where to find water, we have a car to go back to and he didn't. We have a home to go back to and he didn't. He was a complete wanderer and yet he was completely thankful just to see what we see every day."

It is true, no man would at that moment trade spots with him. He had nothing yet he had obtained everything. Dro and Hann gave everything just to see what we take for granted every day.

Both of us teared up at the thought. We were in the most beautiful place on earth. Some of the tallest mountains in Utah surrounded us. Forest and plants filled the place with life. Hann had done so much just to see what we saw so easily.

When Hann was in the caves Canada gave him a single peace of life or a branch from a tree. Hann prized this gift above all material things and now we were surrounded by countless trees with hundreds of branches.

Veritans remember and never forget Veritanism is a movement of thanksgiving. As my brother and I made it back we sat in the shade and sipped our water slowly and ate Vienna sausages with mustard on bread. Then I thought this about Hann again. This would have been a kingly meal to him surviving off cave lizards, salamanders and mushrooms.

Then Adam and I talked about how after Hann left the caves and desserts, how he saw things we only dream of on the voyage with the Titans. "He deserved it more than anyone," I said. "Because he sacrificed everything in the attainment of knowledge."

Then we talked about how there are people who are born in the outside world but always take it for granted. They live in a disconnected society but never leave. They live and die never knowing how great the gift they have is. Likewise our ancient ancestors lived a much richer life always hearing the stream, dancing and singing around the fire. Being connected with every movement of weather. Yet we have even a greater chance to feel the magic and power of the forest as we have the chance to escape our light minded society and see these things in light of a new yet older world.

Adam said. "It is amazing how the knowledge of Hann has come to you. It seems like we are almost unworthy to have it." Then I said. "Yes we are, but since Hann ascended greater than we, it has become his right and privilege to reveal it to us. And none can take that right from him for he is the teacher."

Than Adam picked up a piece of shale from the hill side and said holding back tears, "Only if Hann could see this. That the walls of his prison are in pieces on the hill tops." Then I responded, "He has seen it Adam, he has."

In conclusion I say to all Veritans and all the ends of the earth. Read Expedition and Voyage of the Titans and this time through think of it in the contexts of all you have and have been given. Be grateful for all the bounty of the earth and please do not take it for granted. The Veritans are a grateful people. And because we have so much we must give.

Your brother Hans

## Chapter 12

### Getting Married

After this I went to visit Mom and Dad in California and then went from there to Idaho Falls and met Carolyn and got married. Carolyn started having second thoughts as it is her nature to worry about many things and President Groberg and his wife talked to us to comfort her. At that time I took the chance to ask Groberg a General Authority and the main character in the Other Side of Heaven about Adam-God, since my home teacher Will Williams and I were talking about it. Groberg told me that the meaning of it is that Adam was the Lord of all spirits, and that there were spirits in everything, even trees; and that this was the meaning of the saying, which was a surprisingly wickle answer for an LDS general authority. He told me not to bring it up, but I think his answer made me even more interested. I worked for the Learning Center and continued to study the Journal of Discourses and talk about the Zohar and many other subjects with Will Williams. We finally moved to Orem and I became depressed and asked my Bishop what was next. He said home teaching was all there was left to do and that we had our ticket to the Celestial Kingdom already and that that was the whole program. I was disillusioned by this answer and went to the Mount Timpanogoes Temple to pray.

The History and Testimony of Samuel Warren Shaffer

By himself

2008 - 2010

Introduction

This is an account I have kept of the beginning of my involvement in the Glorious work of the Kingdom of God on earth. I wrote this account with my own hand as these events have unfolded before my very eyes. I have written it from my perspective with only a few revisions. I testify in the name of Jesus Christ that this record is true as I now live and pondering upon it brings joy to my whole being.

I have been prideful and wicked and I marvel at God's mercy in revealing these things to me. My message is to have Faith, Repent, and join God's Kingdom through Baptism, which Kingdom is lead by Jesus Christ. And then to keep on the strait way and continue to repent until you make your Election Sure. I pray to God that I might be equal to my day and continually humble myself unto Repentance.

## Chapter 13

### Prelude to the Work

My story begins far away in Cassville MO. in October of 2004.

I was on a mission for the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints at the time of this first experience. At that time I knew little of the Ways of the Lord my God. I had retired to bed and while asleep the spirit came upon me for I had desires to know my eternal state, and condition before God. I saw many Visions in my dreams that night but the last was the most important. I found myself in a real hurry; I was limping down a very big and wide paved road in a barren wilderness. A light began to appear over the horizon behind me, and I knew my time was almost up to remain alive. I had to get to where I was going but my leg was seriously injured. I limped faster and faster down the great dark highway, my legs hurt very badly, but more then anything I wanted to get to where I was going before the light consumed me. The light grew so bright behind me; I was soon almost engulfed in it. In despair and in pain I fell to the ground near the side of the road by a pole of wood. I hugged the pole for dear life, expecting in that moment to be destroyed! I then looked up, and I saw a personage walking towards me in a cloud of light. His personage was so glorious I could hardly look at him.

I couldn't see his face at first because of the brightness, but marveled at his beautiful temple clothes. He had on a blood red Priesthood robe. His miter was a crown of light! His apron and sash were gold and the rest of his vesture was perfect and white. Then an emotion of excitement and fear hit my heart, piercing me to the center. In that moment I either remembered or heard this scripture, I am not sure which, it said, "Wide is the way that leads to death, but strait and narrow is the way that leadeth unto Eternal Life!" (Matthew 7:22, 23.) I then saw his face as he walked passed me! I raised my hands and with tears exclaimed "My

Lord and my God." He had a rather large yet middle-eastern looking nose. His skin was fair and his eyes were bright and blue. He had beautiful hair, which was slightly curled. I cannot remember to this day whether it was white or blondish, as his personage was so bright I could not tell. He walked right past me and continued on. I suddenly no longer had any pain in my legs and I began to arise, holding onto the pole. As I reached up the pole I felt something to hold onto. I noticed a small path like a hiking trail that stretched on through the valley before me which Jesus was walking on. I began to follow him and I awoke. I don't know if I saw more which was taken from my mind or if I really did awake at this time. This vision has always stayed with me. I know I have seen him. I know Jesus is the Christ the son of God. I say this in the name of him who I saw, Jesus Christ, Amen.

(Dream received by Samuel W. Shaffer in Cassville MO. October 2004.)

I had a desire for the Work at this time, but because of my pride and wickedness I would have rejected the everlasting Gospel. The subtle craftiness of wicked men and the devil kept me in the darkness. I wondered looking for truth not knowing where to find it. Nothing else pertaining to my salvation happened save my marriage to Carolyn, for about 4 years. Until the winter of 2008, when we were happily living in Orem Utah. We attended a dead end ward (Congregation), and I was concerned more then usual about my eternal welfare. I had gone as far as I could in the Church and did everything I was asked to do and yet I wasn't progressing like I knew I should.

One evening I visited the Mt. Timpanogos Temple, to pray about what was next. I did an Endowment session in the temple and went into the Celestial Room. I was the last one through the veil and amazingly found myself alone in that room. I sat on a chair facing the western window. As I was in that Celestial Room I asked God my Eternal Father what he would have me do next, and what I had to accomplish to progress. As I was looking up at the window on the west side of the Room, I heard a Voice as audible as a Man's and as powerful as rolling thunder, but still, soft and kind. It was the voice of the Lord for so surely did the Spirit witness. He said,

1 My son Samuel, If thou wilt enter into mine new and everlasting covenant ye shall not fail, save through the shedding of innocent blood.

2 Therefore what have you against mine ordinances? Have I not commanded you to enter into the same?

3 And why are ye afraid to enter into this covenant? Even the Law of Plural Marriage. For if ye have already entered into the new and everlasting covenant like ye suppose, than you cannot fall by obeying my other commandments.

4 But ye have not entered it. For I have revealed unto you this law and ye must live the same or ye must be damned, for this is my word.

5 Fear not, for present political powers shall soon be no more. And mine anger shall be poured out upon all nations. Amen.

(Revelation received by Samuel W. Shaffer in the Mt. Timpanogos Temple Celestial Room January 15th 2008)

I went down the stairs into the dressing room, with a solemn feeling around me. I had just heard the Voice of God! Awe and gratitude filled my whole being. The heavens, had been closed to me, my whole life and in one moment my most graceful God of Israel opened the heavens for a moment to talk to me. He called me by name and gave me Commandments from Heaven. I drove home in silence, pondering on what had just happened. I walked in the door, and my wife asked if I was okay, seeing the countenance on my face. I said "better then ever." She then said, "While you were gone the Spirit told me something you might not like." I said, "what?" She said, "I got the feeling that we have to be Polygamists." I hugged her really tight and said, "okay."

After this experience I began to look at others who practice this principle. I was acquainted with some on my mission who were members of the Apostolic United Brotherhood, AUB or Allred group. I was satisfied however that they did not have true Prophets. Seeing that the ones I met including one of their top seventies didn't know much more then I did, and that their Prophets had never written a Revelation.

I began to realize that any man who was a Revelator must Reveal! And any man who was a Prophet must Prophecy! This also expanded my true understanding of the state of the Church. I had never in my entire life heard a President of the Church nor any of the Apostles give a Thus Saith the Lord Revelation. I said to myself, "Is it as in the days after Malachi when Israel had not heard the voice of their God for generations? I lowly and simple Samuel Shaffer had heard the voice of God and could not deny it! But whilst all around me Prophets who had not. I continued my search and every group I studied had nothing to show for themselves, no revelations, no visitations or prophecies!

In the past I had read things on the Adam God Doctrine and other sorts of deep doctrine, the church no longer taught. I started thinking to myself, if Polygamy is true and right, then what about all these other sorts of things? I read Journal of Discourses vol. 1 page 50 again, which talks about how Adam came down in the beginning to this earth with a Celestialized body and ate of the fruit which made him mortal. So Brigham revealed that Adam had lived on another planet and had received his Resurrection and Exaltation before he even came to our earth. And that with his resurrected body he was the Father of our Spirits. Which Mormon's call Heavenly

Father, the God we Worship. After reading and praying about these things, I got a witness of the Spirit about their truthfulness just as I knew the Book of Mormon to be true by the power of the Holy Ghost. Dear reader, as I unfold my story to you, pray in the name of Christ if these things are not true. (Moroni 10:3-5)

## Chapter 14

### Finding the Lords Anointed

One day a few weeks later, I was sitting at my computer and I suddenly remembered a quote I had read many years ago by Brigham Young. It just popped into my head like it was placed there as a clue to my dilemma. It said,

"The time will come when this people will be led onto the very brink of hell by their leaders, then the one mighty and strong will come to set the house of God in order."

(Brigham Young at the Provo, Utah Bowery Conference in 1867)

I suddenly decided to look the quote up to see if there was anything else of interest about it. I typed it into Google and hit Enter. The very first Site on the list was parowanprophet.com. I clicked on it, as such sites had interested me in the past, and I always loved to hear the next crazy thing. As I read it, I realized it was not like any site I had ever read before. It was packed to the brim with truth. And the guy who wrote it was frank and to the point. When the night came I was still reading, I had hardly eaten or stopped at all. My wife came and asked if I was going to come to bed. I said "Honey, I just have to read a little more." I read and read. And finally light began to come through the windows and my wife came out of the bedroom. "have you been up all night?" She asked. I only nodded my head and said, "I must keep reading." I read it for three straight days with little breaks and only a few hours of sleep. I felt the spirit come over me so powerfully, I had tears of gratitude for the things I was learning. I was surprised and excited to see Thus Saith the Lord Revelations on his site. I read them right down the list, and as I read them the Holy Ghost bore witness to me that they were true. See what happened in the Garden of Eden,

I decided I had to contact this Man of God somehow, so I immediately started looking for contact information on the site. I located an emailing address and sent him a letter. In the letter I asked if he had heard of the positive effects of Japanese mесо soup on Radiation poisoning, as there is a lot of survival information on the site regarding Nuclear War. He wrote back a kind letter saying he had not, and thanked me for the inquiry, signed Leland. I immediately wrote him back and asked if I could possibly come visit him. Leland replied, yes, and informed me it



would take 3 1/2 hours to get there from Orem. I didn't waste a moment. I packed my bags and put them in the car. I told Carolyn that I loved her and that I should be back in a day or two, as I have to investigate this Prophet in Parowan. She was very supportive and waved bye as I drove away. He said that I would get there in 3 1/2 hours but I said to myself, "Parowan is only just past Beaver, I can get there in 2 and a half easy! I looked at the clock before I left, and didn't look at my watch again until I got there. Once I got onto the highway just south of Provo my driver's side window suddenly fell down into my door, I said Oh man! It was really windy so from then on I could only drive about 65 MPH. I filled up on gas in Fillmore and once I got into Parowan I had a hard time finding his house. Once I pulled up in his driveway. I looked at my watch and it had been 3 1/2 hours, to the second! I couldn't believe it! It must just be a silly coincidence I thought.

As I approached Leland's Front door a feeling of excitement grew, but I didn't know why. As far as I knew he was just some Fundamentalist I was interested in the teachings of, and got Revelations like me. It was a pretty old pioneer house, with a pillared porch. I went up and rang the door bell. Nothing happened so I opened the screen and knocked on the door. I waited for some time and knocked again. I thought I saw a light through the screen and window of the door, in the front room that wasn't there before, so I knocked again thinking for sure someone would hear me this time. But I waited and looked down, when I looked up again the light had subsided. This happened once or twice more, and I started to lose heart. I said to myself, I came here to meet the Parowan Prophet and that is what I am going to do! I knocked once more and an old man opened the door. He smiled and said "Oh, I almost forgot you were coming. And chuckled a bit."

He invited me in, and as I walked over the threshold he shook my hand. In that moment I felt a feeling I hadn't felt for a long long time. I had an instant flash back to when I was a young man. I had gone to the Manti Temple, to do baptisms for the dead. (Baptisms for the dead is an ordinance Mormon's perform in behalf of their ancestors who have died, and it is something a youth of 12 years of age may participate in.) While I was there in the Temple waiting room an old man who was a worker in the Temple wanted to show me something. He opened a vault that was in the corner, on the west side of the waiting room and came out with two swords in his hands. He explained that they were the original Nauvoo Legion swords of Joseph and Hiram Smith. (There was a Legion organized in Nauvoo in early Church history to which Joseph was the general. The purpose of the Legion was to protect the saints who had been persecuted and to keep the City of Nauvoo from being attacked.) I admired Hiram's first and saw the beautiful ivy engraving on the blade. I saw that they were both made very well. Next I handled Joseph's sword, I placed my hand on the handle and unsheathed it. As I touched the handle of the sword, I felt something like a shock and could feel what I thought to be the feeling of Joseph's Presence around me. As I shook Leland's hand I felt the exact same feeling, as when I had

touched Joseph's sword, and could feel his presence. He brought me into his study and told me to have a seat. He had two comfy arm chairs and I sat in the one he gestured towards. It was not a minute before Leland said. "Samuel, you have shaken the hand of the man that has held the hand of Joseph Smith." This Testimony was beyond refutation alone, for I had not told him a thing about my feelings.

He then said, "So you think I am an apostate don't you?" I said, "No, not really." He smiled and said, "Oh you don't huh?" And I said, "No." We continued to talk and he told me so many doctrines that I had either been thinking of, or answered life long pondering of my own in just an instant. He began to tell me things about the Second Anointing. (The Second Anointing is an ordinance performed by God himself. It is when he trusts you with the whole Gospel plan and Anoints you with oil to be a King and a Priest to rule and reign in the house of Israel forever.) I had studied the subject for years, yet I learned more about it in only a few moments in Leland's presence than in all my years of study. I knew that the only men who could expound such things with that level of accuracy, could only be they who had received it. Leland testified that he had seen Jesus Christ and Joseph Smith face to face and shaken their hands, and had their hands upon his head. As he told me these things, my heart within me burned with a testimony of what he said to be true. He explained the doctrine of polygamy and the necessity of three wives for one's Calling and Election in a beautiful way. He expounded upon the subject of Father Adam and unfolded things to me that I knew to be true, yet had never put together. The Spirit rested upon us and I had never heard such a fountain of truth in all my life!

While I sat talking to Leland in the Study, a knock came at the study door. Leland said, "come in." And a tall, noble, blue eyed and brown haired fellow came in. Leland introduced him to me as Tyler. We said hi, and we took a break to get something to eat. During this time we were in the living room, when another knock came at the front door, and a man named Garret stepped in and said hello.

After I was introduced and visited for a bit. Leland turned to Garret and said. "Sam's driver side window has fallen down into his door because the front bracket is broken, would you go fix it for him?" He nodded and went out to my car. He took the door apart and indeed it was the front bracket! I hadn't even told him about my window! And I didn't even know it was the front bracket myself.

I went back in and started to talk with the Prophet again. He told me things about myself only I or people who knew me well could possibly know. He told me God had shown him these things and he counseled me on many things, including not to tell people more than they are ready to hear, which indeed is a problem of mine. He prophesied when it would rain and when it would stop to the moment and many other things that proved to me he had the spirit of Prophecy.

Since that time, I have seen dozens and dozens of his Prophecies fulfilled to the letter. I know Leland is a Prophet of God, and truly has seen what he says he has seen.

That night Leland said, "I am going to inquire of the Lord about you." I said, "Okay, goodnight." I went out to the living room to make my bed. The study was next to the living room and his room was through the study. I made my bed and was about asleep, when a light began to appear in my room. I was not sure if it was a spiritual light or a physical light. I did not really see it with my physical eyes but with some other eyes as it were my spiritual ones. It increased until it was very bright. My heart was beating as I was not sure if I was about to see an Angel or a Vision. It was the whitest light I have ever seen, white far more than driven snow, like white flame. The light remained for about 3 and a half hours and then subsided. The next morning I went into the study and Leland was sitting there with a glowing smile about him. I asked him what the Lord said and he turned to me and began to speak. What came out of his mouth touched on many parts that I know are from the Lord. What I have seen and felt I cannot deny. I believe this is only the beginning. The Lord is about to call many prophets to call repentance unto this people as in all other dispensations of the earth.

I pondered upon a doctrine Leland had taught me that I had known but had forgotten. He showed me that there is a separate baptism into the Kingdom of God, as well as a baptism into the Church. (Documented History of the Church 4:586 and Journal of Discourses 18:160; 18:241; 6:122)

That day I told Leland I wanted to be baptized into the Kingdom. He thought about it for a moment, and said, "Are you sure?" I said, "Please, I know what you have taught me is true. I know you are a Prophet and a Priest after the order of the Son of God, and I believe all you have said."

"Sounds good." He said. We arranged a time with a local motel to use their hot tub for that purpose. I asked Garret to baptize me. He stepped into the water and dedicated it for the purpose of baptism. I then stepped into the water and we got into position. He raised his hand to the square and said. "Samuel Warren Shaffer, by the authority of the Melchizedek Priesthood I baptize you preparatory to receiving further ordinances in the Kingdom of God. And do it in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost. Amen." I then went into the water, and it seemed some time passed and then I come up again. Suddenly I felt cleaner and more pure than I ever had. Garret then un-dedicated the waters for that purpose. This was a Baptism into the Kingdom, not into a church. Like George Q Cannon said,

"You well informed Latter-Day Saints know that there are two powers which God has restored in these last days. One is The Church of God, the other the KINGDOM OF GOD. A man may belong to the KINGDOM OF GOD and yet not be a member of The Church of God."

(Journal of Discourses 20:204)

Hence the different Baptismal wording, into the Kingdom. I am still a member of the Church in good standing as far as I am concerned. And I intend to remain that way unless the Church rejects me, but now I am also a member of God's Kingdom on earth. I know this work is of God, I know his Kingdom has begun to roll forth as Prophesied in Daniel Chapter 2. I know Leland is the stone cut out without hands, and I know this Kingdom will roll forth until it rules over all nations.

We went home to Leland's, dried off and changed. We then held a meeting in which Leland told us some precious things of the Kingdom. Finally he bade me come sit in front of him. I did so and Leland placed his hands on my head, Tyler, Garret and Jim also joined him. He blessed me that I would receive the Holy Ghost with power. And also prophesied of my life in the future. The Lord again urged me not to teach more than people were ready to hear. And pronounced many blessings upon my head. He also said God was watching when I got my Endowments, and that even though they were not complete, God would hold me to my covenants. He ended in the name of Jesus Christ, and said Amen. During this blessing I felt the power of God like I never had before. As he blessed me to receive the Holy Ghost a conduit opened as it were in my head strait to the Celestial worlds. My mind and being were filled with light! And understanding and enlightenment filled my whole body as with fire. I had never experienced the Spirit so strong in all my life. After that experience I have felt the Holy Ghost constantly attending me like I never had before. That one experience has changed my life forever!

That night we gathered for the Full Moon feast. Leland told us the significance of the Full Moon in Israel. And I truly felt I had come home to the Prophet, like Jethro or Elijah of old. When we were done eating the meal we then went out and blew the Shofars to commemorate it. Why did God pick me? I wondered.

As I went to bed that night in Leland's living room I looked up at the chandeliers above me. I thought of a teaching Leland told me earlier, about the Gods coming down in the beginning to become Adams and Eves. As I stared at those chandeliers the first principles of the order of the Gods began to be revealed to me. And my understanding increased further than it ever had. Pure Society beyond expression! Oh what things are withheld from the world that I cannot begin to express them.

The next day I visited Jim, one of my new brothers in the Kingdom. He brought me into his house and showed me his extensive library. We had a good heart to heart talk and he advised me to gather to the Kingdom as soon as possible, that I might receive my blessings under the hand of the Lord. He also showed me many things pertaining to the Kingdom of God. He, like Garret, also bore many testimonies of Leland and the truthfulness of the Work.

When I arrived home I told my wife we had to go and move to southern Utah. I visited twice more before we got things in order to move. While I was in Orem I used that chance to warn all my friends, and preach to them the gospel with little success. I visited Leland with my brothers Adam and Danny and also with Carolyn on the New Moon. We had a wonderful time and felt the spirit. When the moon was ready to set we went out to the overpass to see it. We saw the tiny sliver going down over the mountains and the Priests blew the Shofars. It was just like being in ancient Israel. I thank God every time I think I ever had the privilege of being there as these things unfolded.

Adam, Carolyn and I went home and we talked about the gospel the whole way home. When I retired to bed that night I had a Dream.

## Chapter 15

### Who will believe?

In my dream, my family, followers of Leland, and myself, were traveling through some beautiful woods. We finally came to a very nice mansion, I had never seen before. I walked up the steps and gave a knock on the knocker. When the door opened standing before me was Joseph Smith. I cannot explain the feelings in my heart at that moment, I hugged him and marveled that he had golden blond hair. He invited us in and we stayed and visited for a long time. Finally he brought us out into the woods in order to do some endowment. He instructed us to sit down on the ground. Some looked at each other uncomfortably as we were wearing Temple Clothes.

Suddenly my brother Benjamin said, "I would NEVER sit on the ground with my Temple clothes on." And he walked off, which pained my heart. Joseph then instructed us that whoever wanted their blessings would have to fight him for them. My brother Adam was the first to get up and walk forward. He and Joseph began to grapple and brother Joseph quickly took him down to the ground. Brother Joseph reached out his hand to help Adam up, but Adam's pride was hurt more than he himself. He got up and said, "If I can't even get my blessings then I am out!" And he also walked off even though Joseph had said he could take his seat again. This pained my heart even further.

Suddenly my brother Joseph John Shaffer without warning said, "This is bull." And walked off also. My father James C Shaffer then whispered in my ear that he didn't think this was really Joseph Smith, and that I would be wise to leave as well. Tyler one of my friends in the Kingdom spoke up and said, "Of course this is Joseph Smith." I notice my Brother Danny was sitting next to him. I turned to my father and said, "Dad, I know beyond any shadow of doubt that this is Joseph Smith Jr. I know this is the Prophet." He then left as well which pained me even worse.

Next I got up and went to fight brother Joseph. He smiled at me and said, "Sam why do you think you could beat me, when I just beat your brother Adam who is stronger and better at fighting than you? I then said, "Joseph, I know you will kick my butt! But I will do anything for my blessing, for I know that you are the Prophet Joseph Smith. He then grabbed me in a hug, and said, "Sam you passed the test! Your brother did not understand that God himself will give us new Temple clothes like the ram in the thicket. And I would have given all of you your blessings whether you beat me or not." I then asked him, "Why did my brothers have to leave?" And Joseph said, "The pride of the world." And then we cried together.

(Vision in the night, Revealed to Samuel W Shaffer March 9th 2008)

I know this was a True Revelation for I have seen its literal fulfillment! My Brother Ben was the first to go, he could not accept the fact that blacks could not hold the Priesthood. He felt that if he admitted he was wrong in sustaining the 1978 "revelation" he would in essence be putting mud on his Temple clothes. Since he let Canaanites into the Temple. So he said he thought we were "prejudice and crazy." I Believe his Support for Barack Hussein Obama was instrumental in this.

Next was my Brother Adam, he said he wanted to get his endowments and blessings from Leland but he didn't want to Sacrifice anything for it. He wanted to keep his wife who did not approve of anything strange or Polygamist related. Hence he did not want to move down to Parowan or do other things to keep her happy. Leland said no, and Adam said, "Well if I can't get my blessings, I am out."

Next my Brother Joseph said, "That is Bull." After I explained why Adam was not coming around, and that we had to sacrifice a few things.

Last, my Father is still thinking about it. Now I don't think this is inevitable. My Father can choose his own destiny. So we shall see what will happen. But the rest of the Dream has literally been fulfilled to the very letter. I believe this Vision was in order to let me know what their individual problems would be. And I know it was from God.

I visited one more time with Danny for the Passover. Passover was wonderful and it felt good to do the will of the Lord. There was a man visiting from the Allred group at Passover, he had decided to leave Polygamy and join the Church again. You could see the darkness around him that comes from rebelling against true principles. We had a good conversation but could not change his mind. I learned you must teach with the Spirit that both may be edified. After this Carolyn and I prepared to move to southern Utah.

7 "Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us;

8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

(1 Corinthians 5)

When we got to Parowan we stayed at Jim's house for a week or so, yet I spent most of my time at Leland's. I cannot recollect all that took place in that week, but I know I grew a lot!

One night Jim suggested we go look up at some land in the mountains by Panguitch. We left and coming back over the mountains our car overheated over and over again. Finally it wouldn't start at all. A nice trucker and his son stopped and told us it looked like a blown head gasket. They gave us a ride to beaver and Garret picked us up from the truck stop there. The next day Leland and Tyler hitched up the car trailer and we all headed out to get our car. I was amazed at the helping hand and efficiency of it. We got the car and began to tow it back. As we came to the overpass back onto I-15 we saw a trucker with his load lopsided and falling over, on the side of the road. Leland began to pull over and I asked what we were doing. Leland said "Helping this guy out!" The man who was carrying 75lb cement buckets was almost in tears, as it was his weekend and the only time he could see his wife. He was thus far trying to re stack them by hand, one by one, which would have taken him all night and into the next day. We got up there and began helping, he thanked us profusely but we said, "No problem!" Finally Leland smiled and said "I have got an idea, and if you listen to my words I promise you in the name of Jesus Christ it will work. He then said "get all this webbing and feed them through these ratchets on the side of the bed." So we did, he then said, "Throw them over the (lopsided) load and feed them through the loops on the other side." "Now," he said, "Throw them back over and tie them to this board." We did so and then he instructed us, "Tie this rope to the board and to the loops on this side." I was totally confused and so was the trucker, but Tyler and Garret knew better, they knew to follow the Prophet when he spoke. Finally Leland said, "Now tighten it down." Garret and Tyler began to and the whole load just literally fell back into place! I couldn't believe my eyes. It didn't fall over the other way or anything, it was a miracle! Every last bucket fell into place.

The Trucker was speechless and so was I. It was like when Christ told his disciples to move the stone from off the grave. And once they put forth a little effort they were shown mighty works. He thanked us over and over again. We told him not to thank us but to thank our God, The God of Israel. We gave him a flier and he promised never to forget us. He then went on his way after retying down his load. As we drove away Leland turned to me and said, "That's what we are doing, blessing people's lives." I never felt so good about an act of service as I did that night.

My little brother Danny came down and got baptized as well. Leland gave me the Aaronic priesthood that I might perform the baptism. For he explained, this is a Patriarchal work and

every family unit is to stand on its own feet. During meeting I sat in front of the Prophet again. He laid his hands upon me, and Conferred the Priesthood of Aaron on my head. During that blessing he said that I would use my Priesthood for the offering up of Sacrifices, and that I would be if faithful one of those sons of Levi to offer up an offering in righteousness. He also blessed me that I would bring thousands into the Kingdom through my preaching. He sealed these blessings and many others upon my head, in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen. In that moment I felt my body fill with power, it was as if I had on my temple robes, only spiritually. I cannot express the feeling but I can tell you this, I had never felt so full of the Priesthood in all my life. I knew at that moment that I held more Priesthood than I had ever dreamed of. After this I was ordained to the office of Priest by Garrett.

I brought Danny down into the waters of baptism in the same place I was baptized. He came up out of the water, and Leland confirmed him when we got back to the house. Danny was excited. In that meeting Leland told Danny he had better get a job or he would be sent back; Which did eventually happen. (But luckily he is back with us now, in 2009.)

After a time an old friend Nathan Sweazey had read a testimony I sent him. He and his brother being interested came down to meet the Prophet. We talked about the latter days and the coming of the one mighty and strong (prophesied by Joseph and Brigham) for a good part of the night. The next day they went and met the Prophet. They spent two strait days talking to him. When I came back from work I could see a change on their faces. Leland had answered every last one of their questions before they asked them. Many miracles happened in those few days as well. Jim and Nathan Sweazey asked to be baptized. Leland performed the ordinance on both accounts. When Jim came up out of the water the most miraculous thing happened. The spirit fell strait way upon him as he came up out of the water like tongues of fire, just as in ancient times. He hugged Leland and began to cry and speak unspeakable things. The whole room was illuminated by spiritual light. My wife moved upon by the spirit also asked if she could be baptized, so after Nathan and Jim were done.

I went down into the water and baptized her. She said she felt very clean and was happy. She also kissed me. When we got back into meeting Leland confirmed all three of them. When he confirmed Jim he simply blessed him that he would continue receiving the spirit. After Jim and Nathan, Leland gave my wife the Gift of the Holy Ghost. He said in part, that she covenanted in her pre-existent life to marry me. He also stated she would be blessed by all our posterity for generations to come, and that she would be an honored mother in Zion. At this point Carolyn began to cry and so did I. The spirit was so strong in the room everyone began to have spiritual manifestations. Later on in the meeting a beautiful smell came over everyone like many flowers. Jim asked Leland, "Does the Spirit have a smell?" Leland said, "No, but Angels do have a perfume." I testify, there were heavenly beings in our midst that day, and it was more like



Pentecost then I thought I would ever experience. I even heard heavenly music in my bedroom a few days later. Now my wife and I are firmly rooted in the faith with many witnesses, and no matter what hardships come our way we will know God rules in Israel! Adam is God, our only God and Leland is his Messenger!

Of late we have got another new member named Brian, who is Garrett's brother in law. He is zealous in the work! And is filled with the Spirit. He has learned more from the Holy Ghost than many of us in such a short time. He is already having many revelations. I am excited for him as I can see that he will bring millions into the work.

## Chapter 16

### The Kingdom Rolls on

A few months ago Leland in meeting looked solemn, he said "Brethren you will see in a few months the worlds Financial markets go crazy. And some banks will have hardships, some will even close. During this time congress will pass unconstitutional laws to bail out the market and put us in worse debt. Gas will go down for a short time during this, yet soon It will go back up." Is that not a true Prophecy? He said it when things were looking up. He made similar Prophecies as early as the 90s.

Lately we also celebrated the Feast of Tabernacles, it was wonderful! We all slept in Tents as it says in the Law and my Father came down to do it with us. During that feast Leland got a phone call from an old friend named Brother Ed, he was in the hospital and dying. He was having blood problems and couldn't eat and many other things, and the doctors could not do anything for him. Leland told us all to pray for him that night in our tents. The next morning Leland took a new handkerchief and with the brethren blessed it, just as Joseph did in church history. He pronounced a blessing upon it that the virtue in it vested would heal brother Ed, so that he could get up and walk out of the hospital whole. He then sent it priority mail. The next day we performed the Water Ordinance in the law instead of a Sacrifice, since we didn't have enough people to make a sacrifice. It was powerful and as we stood in the prayer circle I knew we were fulfilling the will of the Lord. On the last day of Tabernacles we got a call. Brother Ed said he wiped the Handkerchief on his face as Leland instructed him, and he was healed. And checked out of the hospital rejoicing.

I just went on a short Mission with Leland it was Awesome! Here is a little what I said about it. I learned more in the last few days than I learned all two years of my mission for the Church. And that is not even close to an exaggeration, probably twice as much at least! All the people who looked like returned missionaries, Elders quorum Presidents and Bishops were the first to call

the cops, Forbid us to preach and call us names. And I thought the Baptists were bad! They don't have anything on the Mormons. We also told the cops we knew our rights and we were allowed to preach on public ground, and they couldn't argue with that. For most of the time we passed out fliers about Survival. And we had some really good conversations with passerby. For the most part we hung around this convention that was going on in St. George. The Convention was just a bunch of booths selling different kinds of stuff but it was a great place to talk to people. My favorite moments were talking with Leland in the Motor home though. He told me many wonderful mysteries of the Kingdom and taught me many lessons. I have seen first hand that Leland Freeborn does indeed have wisdom fraught to govern all the earth. His wisdom is endless like Solomon's.

I will tell of one particular experience that impressed me. Leland handed me a stack of Survival fliers while in the motor home and said to me. "Sam, when you hand these fliers out say 'God bless you' to everyone." At first I was taken a back. Saying 'God bless you' was never really my thing. I also didn't know how the Mormons would take it. I thought about it, then decided 'well I am just going to say it since Leland told me to.' The minute I did people responded much more positively! They said "thank you" and smiled at me, I got in more conversations. And the reception was more positive all around. I marveled at this, did Leland know something I didn't about people's attitudes? Or did he just have the blessing of God? Clearly both.

This last meeting was very humbling. Leland told us by the Spirit of prophecy all our weaknesses. He was frank and completely accurate. If you were there you would know beyond doubt that he is a Prophet of the Living God and a Shepherd to all Israel. He did it in love and even cried a little. He told us we had to change or we would be condemned. I hope you humble yourself and come and see without judging the Lords Anointed. Come and see to save your own soul! Don't run away from it, come and see if he is a Prophet for yourself. I know Beyond doubt that Leland Freeborn is a Prophet of God. And I thank God every day that I ever could have known this Man!

I know his honesty, I have seen his gifts in Action, I have seen his Prophecies fulfilled. He is a True Prophet of God in every sense of the word, and I know it by the Power of the Holy Ghost. He will be proven a false prophet no more then Elijah was! Nothing can stop the work from progressing and the Kingdom from rolling forth. With all these evidences can you deny the mercy of God? Does not this news of the Kingdom of our Lord bring you down into the depths of humility confessing your sins? Will you not be baptized for so great a work? Please humble yourself and come taste of these fruits and see for yourself if they are not good. Instead of Judging rashly. For God will Judge those who Judge his Anointed Prophets in these last days. Come as to John at Jordan! For the Kingdom of God is at hand.

I am Now going to relate part of the Meeting to you. We were told of a vision Leland had the night before when an Angel had visited him. The Angel showed him a giant scroll that was hundreds of feet high and miles long. On it were the names of all those who were condemned to die. Leland noticed that mine and others in the Kingdom's names were on it. He exhorted us with all the power of his being to repent of the things the Angel told him about, that our names might be erased. He related what the Angel told him regarding each one of us; which was not only accurate but struck to the center of our beings. We have been humbled and now realize we have been very wicked prideful and frivolous. I myself have been humbled, I am in the pit of sorrow, I pray God might forgive me. I pray the Holy Ghost may show me all my weaknesses that I can overcome them, that at last I might have faith, hope and Charity enough to be saved.

I know I am a sinner and I so terribly want to change. I keep this record that my children will know what great mercy God has had upon their Fathers. And whether I die and slip into the obscurity of darkness or triumph, may my children read this that they may be saved and make their own elections sure. This is the end of this History for the Moment.

I don't remember When it was exactly but a little before this time, Leland started getting emails from a man in Russia named Yaroslav. Yaro had been led to the website and had been converted. Yaro is the city attorney for (in English Varonna) city Russia of about two million people. By virtue of his position he not only believed Russia was still planning on Nuclear War he knew it. He is a member of a Church called the Catacomb Church in Russia. Leland and Yaro emailed back and forth and even talked on the phone as time went on. Apparently Yaro is friends with the leader of this Church named Arch Bishop Ambrose. Bishop Ambrose also became converted as time went on and even used the D&C in some of his meetings. One day around this time he and fifteen other bishops had a council where they officially accepted Leland and the Work. They quoted out of D&C 133 and declared they knew themselves to be of the tribe of Gad, which means "A troop is coming."

Sometime later, I was praying and received this Revelation,

You have inquired of me whether Nimrod could have taken over Heaven in relation to one Scripture my servant Joseph Translated. This is the Answer which I give thee, If God had not stopped him he could have done many things to thwart my Father's Plan. But my Father sees the beginning from the end and he knew Nimrod's heart, even from before he was born. Can a man trick God? Or can a man stop the arm of God who made planets swirling with clouds and endless moons, Who knows the heart of man, and can stop the raging sea? Who gives every creature its very breath from moment to moment? Who knows the End from the Beginning and can do just one little thing to stop the works of mighty Men? No, for man is nothing and the works of man and the devil cannot stop the works of God for the Great Jehovah hath spoken it. Amen.

(Revelation to Samuel Shaffer September 2008, at Summit Utah.)

After this we continued to live in Summit, I got laid off at work in the cemetery in the middle of October. We helped Leland a lot, and continued to progress. I fixed up the shelter really good. Leland gave us some instruments so we could tell how much radiation there was. I had a dream, I saw flashes on the horizon and another dream where I saw a nuke hit what looked like the point of the mountain, in the Provo area.

Around this time, I went on a trip with my Dad, Mom, Danny and Anni down to Arizona to see my brother Ben. Ben soon had some one on one time with me and went into how he was concerned about all this fundamentalist stuff, and also refused to believe a Nuclear War was coming. I shared with him Isaiah two, three, four and twenty eight. We went on a hike with Dad to see suaro cactuses and I got more time to talk with my Him. One of his biggest concerns were about Black people, and how we were prejudice. I showed him plainly what Brigham said, and Zechariah 14:21, and finally told him he could believe what he wants, but he couldn't blame us for simply following the gospel clearly illustrated. That night we went over to one of his friend's houses, named Todd. He was married and had three children. They put their kids to bed and talked with us to about 12 o clock. At first he wanted to talk about the illuminati and alternate forms of energy, but as the night progressed the topic turned to my views on religion. I showed him and his wife what I believed right out of the Bible and Doctrine and Covenants. At the end of the night, he said "I deeply admire anyone who is striving to live the united order, but I don't feel impressed I need to move up to Parowan." Of course I hadn't brought up moving, but he figured that was part of it, since I obviously believed in consecration. I told him to pray about these things and to read the website which he said he had and would continue to do. We left with a prayer and headed home.

As we went come, Ben began to complain, how I not only took all the time but how I was stupid to believe some of the things I had taught that night. I told him to repent and humble himself, which only made him madder. We didn't talk for a while the next morning, but soon he apologized, and so did I. We ate thanksgiving at Wendy's (Ben's wife) grandmother's house. I only ate a little as I felt not to over eat on a false tradition. Ben and I found some time to talk away from everyone else, and he continued to ridicule me. I couldn't take it and blew up at him, I shouldn't have done it and regretted it later. I apologized for it later, but Ben was so hard hearted he not only made fun of my religion which was his religion as well, but would not budge to logic. We talked a few more times before we left, but I realize now I should have been more patient with him. The whole time my Dad, counseled me to keep my cool, saying, "look you are making good progress with him, he just needs time, but don't blow it now." I now regret not taking my father's council more carefully. But I believe it is not over, I still have more time to teach him. He somehow thought it was impossible for me to teach him however, me

being his younger brother, he always pretended to be so much wiser than me and this was no exception.

We went back and I enjoyed the ride, I drove the last stretch of Arizona from the Indian reservation all the way up to Summit. I parted from my parents, with a feeling of sadness still lingering, over my stubborn brother.

## Chapter 17

### A Day of Revelation

We all got tense as Christmas came and went, awaiting the Nuclear War. I set all our Christmas boxes out on the lawn, marked "Free, as long as you read Jeremiah 10". Yaro continued to communicate with us and everything was going well. Some reporters came to one of our meetings around Christmas from the LA Times. They enjoyed our meeting and misquoted Leland as usual, saying he said "It will happen." When he only said, "I think it will happen." We continued to serve the Lord and do our best. As January came around I received another Revelation, it said,

Thus saith the Lord your God, the God of all Israel. I am before your face and have set Leland as a standard to all nations. Many say, "who can hear him in distant lands?" Yet my Ten Lost Tribes in Russia did hear him, and know that I am. Many cannot hear my voice, they want proof and signs, but they believe not the Book of Mormon. That I will give them no signs or wonders until after the trial of their faith. If one cometh showing that he comes in power he is not of me. I gave Moses nothing that the Sorcerers of Egypt could not do until after the time that they were sufficiently hardened. Hardened hearts will make excuses until they see their doom. Many say Leland's Prophecies are passed like they said of my servants Jeremiah, Lehi, Samuel, Noah, Isaiah and many others. Know they not that no man knoweth the day or the hour? Do they not believe the scriptures? Or think that I cannot do it in mine own time saith the Lord? They say we will not burn, that time is passed, like your friend Wil said unto you. Know they not the scriptures? That I will reap the earth with a flaming fire, and all the proud will become ash? Do they think I will work a miracle for them like Daniel's fellows when they have never exercised even a particle of faith? Oh ye wicked and perverse generation, full of idol worshipers and adulterers, if you have never exercised the faith to raise the dead or to walk on water, think not that I would preserve you in the fire, or that I would raise you up from its flames in that day!

They sneer at my Law, they say we do not have to do like our fathers for a man teacheth us otherwise, they suppose they are the rocks raised up to Abraham that John spoke about, but they are nothing but gentiles. They recognize not the preacher in the Endowment because wicked men removed the plain and precious things, like in times past. But I say unto you the men that stand at the head of my Church are the preacher. And my father does not believe a word of it! Has your brother not read D&C 132:61? And therefore how can he make excuses? It is because his wife is his master and she teacheth her children so. I will not have such abominations among my people, and your brother will not get a witness until he obey my Law in this thing. If a man's wife compel him to break the Law and he does so with her, will I not cast them both out together? Your family is not all of the house of Israel, but you and Daniel are of the pure stock of the olive branch. Your father still had a drop of blood from that boy who shipwrecked named Klopfenstein who was a gentile Saith the Lord, but he shook as the Holy Ghost changed that blood to the blood of Israel, but because of the hardness of your hearts you did not see that miracle at that time.

I am the Lord God Almighty and endless is my name, my abode is among flaming fire and a mansion made of pure crystal. Who can look and declare my glory? I look down and see the Stars and Moons. Galaxies are before me. My abode is pure light and intelligence! You have been in my presence in times past and seen these things, but you only have a fleeting memory of light. You remember my Servant vaguely as if you look through a glass darkly. You knew him before you were born and you made covenants as you stood around him and his wives, to uphold the Kingdom of God and to warn your fellow men of things to come shortly upon the earth. You knew the Medlers, who are of the house of Israel. Talk to them for you promised to tell them about Leland in the pre-existence.

Your mother taught you correct principles in times past but now she has fallen in love with the things of this world. She cannot see, and has not got a Revelation for many years as you reckon time. Your Father knows this but your Mother does not consider. Tell your Father to fear not, for I was angry he did not listen to the Spirit in 1978, but I have forgiven him and his garments have been cleansed from this in the waters of baptism. He but needs to ask me and listen. It is now time to Speak forth and warn, forsake those who you have warned time and time again, and find new people to give my message to. The time is short and you still have a work to do. Love the truth, continue in study and prayer. I have seen you and your wife's effort to read and pray together and it hath pleased me Saith the Lord. It is my Fathers good pleasure to give you the Kingdom, purify yourself that you may see Angels. This is the word of your Lord, even so. Amen.

(Revelation to Samuel W Shaffer, January 30th 2009, in Summit Utah.)

Sometime after this, I wrote a letter to our friends the Medlars, bearing my testimony and telling them of the website, parowanprophet.com. Miracles continued to happen in our daily lives and we praised the lord for them. Around this time I had another revelation as I took a hike out behind the town one clear night. This is what I wrote,

My son. My son. Thus saith the Lord, I shall reveal unto thee the Law and Covenant of they fathers as thou progress in me. Thou hast believed my servant Leland F. Freeborn and hast believed the Words which I have revealed unto you, and It has been accounted to you as righteousness. Have faith and be glad! For as thou take each step line upon line, My servant Leland will give you blessing upon blessing, until thou hast received every blessing, ordinance and doctrine at his hands that is necessary to enter into my presence.

Take thy shoes from off thy feet for thou standest on Holy Ground. Look up in yonder Heavens and tell me what thou seest. ("I see a Star most bright and glorious.") I reveal only a small portion of what I told thy Father Abraham at this time, the star which thou seest is Kolob, the one that is near unto Elohim's throne. Thou hast wondered about such things for a time and I reveal it unto you because of my mercy unto you. Thou art my son and it is my Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom. Follow thy Lord even Leland F Freeborn in whatever he tells you that is right. For upon his head are Crowns and Powers that ye know not, and he shall show unto you my mysteries as you are ready for them.

These present persecutions will be but a small moment. Just as I told you in the Temple that present Political powers will be no more, so will it be with these men that claim to be my Priesthood. Men have got rewards in heaven for standing up for my Gospel in the past. And how hard is it to say what is right? And yet ye shall not loose your reward. Thy Bishop doesn't understand the truth but the high priests he shall bring you before do know better and are wicked men. Go to thy house and write what I have said unto you, and I will tell thee more. Amen.

(Revelation to Samuel W Shaffer, March 1st 2009, behind Summit Utah.)

After this I went home and wrote more which shall not be revealed at this time.

Sometime after this Jim Quada, suggested we go on a mission to some friends of his and mine in northern Utah and Idaho. I agreed it would be a good idea, and Leland gave his blessing. First we headed up to Price Utah, and visited with the Sweasy's, Jim and Nathan. That night Jim Sweasy had a friend over named Mike Collier, son of Fred Collier, who is a fundamentalist prophet. He was very receptive, and we talked a good portion of the night and the next morning. We then headed up to the Provo Orem area. We had a wonderful discussion with Teresa James. She felt the spirit and testified to us she knew what we had said to be true. We then headed north to SLC, and visited some of Jim's Friends. One person we visited was Marvin

D Allred, and the spirit testified to him we were telling the truth. We then spent the night at Steven Lowe's house, who had a nice discussion with us, but his wife was not interested. We then headed to Idaho Falls. My in-laws flat rejected us and promptly left not willing to discuss anything with us. We visited with my old friend Will Williams. He was interested but steeped in his traditions. We then headed for Pinsdale, Montana and slept in the car. We visited with Bill Kurner, but he wasn't interested. We headed back and visited with my wife and I's friend Connie Campka who lives in Idaho Falls. We had a wonderful long discussion with her, but she wasn't sure what to think. We left everything we could and went on. Once we got back to Provo we spent the night with my parents, and had a good discussion with Joe. I got a call from Teresa James, and she told me she got cold feet and that she changed her mind. And that she didn't want to talk about it, and that she would stay with the Church. We went by but she wouldn't answer so we went on. We went back to Price and visited with the Sweasy's one more time and then headed home. We got home and crashed.

It was a wonderful experience to be doing the work of the Lord, and we reported our trip at meeting. Brian got a kick out of our story and said we should send us more often. I know this work is the work of the Lord.

Passover came and went, and it was wonderful! We lived the week of unleavened bread and were much blessed for it. Life was wonderful. After a time we were compelled to move to Cedar City due to finances, and found a better deal for our needs. We were not there long when I was singing praises unto my God and received this Revelation. It is as follows.

O Lord, thy ways are glorious. Thou art my King and inspiration. Thy words speak from the ends of the earth. Thou sendest forth the gospel as on rolling wings. The Earth is thine and the Heavens glorify thy name forever. Amen.

My Son Samuel, The Spirit expressly speaks that Pentecost shall be the feast of the Holy Spirit unto you forever. As the stars give forth their light thou shall sing forth praises unto me. And as thou doest this in righteousness before me I will open up the windows of Heaven, and the light of Heaven shall attend thee.

When was there ever a plant without water, or a stream without rain? Likewise I have shown you that everything is matter, and there is nothing that is not material. It is the veil over thy spirit that keeps you from seeing the world of spirits freely. Thus saith the Lord all things are material, and physical things spring forth from that which is Spiritual. And when you are brought up in the morning of the first resurrection you will see it is all matter, for your body will be a Spiritual body of flesh and bones. And every man will be judged by the spirit he is raised with, whether it is a Spirit of salvation or a spirit of damnation. And those Spirits that are found in Paradise will be raised first, first those that are perfect.



And Behold it was on Pentecost that Ham stole the Garments from his Father Noah. That it might be fulfilled there is a spiritual prison and a spiritual paradise and the wicked shall be separated from the righteous. And that same day, took Ham all his house and his tents, and departed from the presence of Noah into the wilderness. And it was on Pentecost that the Apostles and disciples praised my name and received tongues of fire, which gave them strength to go out and preach my gospel. And the gospel has always been the same whenever it has been preached. From thy Father Abraham back to Adam and from Adam to the present day. That man might enter this order of the Priesthood, which is after the order of the Son of God.

For thou beholdest the rocks upon the mountains, for they are entities of spirit, and what created their heavier grosser shell, does not now appear. Like wise as you gain faith that my angels are constantly around you, and spiritual things which do not now appear are not far distant. Then thou shalt gain the faith to rend the veil and see Me and all the Holy Prophets since the world began. And we shall come in and sup with you and fellowship one with another. For even at this time you hear the still small voice which is a manifestation of spirit, and what have ye against seeing a little and beginning to feel a little, until you are brought into my presence? I am the Lord your God the Holy One of Israel. Even so, Amen.

(Revelation to Samuel W Shaffer, May 4th 2009, in Cedar City.)

We continued to live happily in Cedar until about the end of May, when Carolyn became anxious about many things. Danny decided to move out of his own freewill and choice. Around this same time, Tyler moved out of Leland's house, do to circumstances, and Jim Quada became more and more discontent with Leland and the Kingdom in general. Amidst this turbulent time the words of my Revelation regarding Pentecost came into focus. This is the day of separation in every age. I pray the Saints in these latter days can rise up like the apostles of old.

## Chapter 18

### Pentecost A Feast of the Spirit

I was taking down the shelter in our Cedar City apartment, because Daniel was moving out again and we wanted to erect a new one in the other room. As I was taking books off of the boards, suddenly I felt something on my beard. I felt it with my hand and to my astonishment it was oil. I touched my head and found more oil all over my head. I smelt it and found it had a wonderful fragrance. As I got down off the shelter I received a prompting to go bless my garden. I immediately acted on it and as I was walking up the stairs I saw for the first time, a spirit standing at the top of the stairs. He was wearing white robes and gestured for me to walk

past him. I did so and he vanished behind me. I walked out the door and went to my garden. I raised my arm to the square and said,

"My Father which art in yonder heaven, by the authority of the Melchizedek Priesthood, I bless this garden that it may be fruitful and get all the water it needs, and bring forth fruit to us or whoever may be here to enjoy it. And I do this in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen.

Once I had said "Amen", it immediately began to rain, and the next day my zucchini, had more leaves and looked way better! And the whole garden had sprouted and sprang forth unlike it was the day before.

Tonight on the 26th, our neighbor across the street to whom we are teaching the gospel came over. She was having problems with her daughter and wished for a ride somewhere to talk to her. Carolyn and I took her and waited in the car. Afterwards we drove her back home, we pulled up and talked in the car a while. She told us how her daughter was mixed up with these people and that she was not in a good situation. She asked me to say a prayer so I was about to when I heard the voice of the spirit. It said,

"Say not only a prayer for her, for if your garden is worthy of a blessing by the priesthood, how much more is her daughter worthy of it?"

I followed the prompting and pronounced a priesthood blessing in behalf of her daughter, that she would have a clear head and know how to get out of the situation she was in. I did it by the authority of the Melchizedek Priesthood and in the name of Jesus Christ.

This morning I had a dream, this is now the 27th of May.

"In my dream there was a great manor house, with walls, towers, and many other outer houses and buildings. In the center were beautiful gardens with a large vineyard and old olive trees. In time the Lord of the house appointed a Steward over the house and went on a long journey. I saw the dream from the perspective of a servant that took hats at the door of the house. Many rude guests began to visit the house whose children acted proudly and did not respect the Lord of the house. The Steward let them stay and things began to fall into disarray. The garden began to be trampled under foot and die. Soon the Steward of the house decided to plant pine trees all over the vineyard and around all the olive trees.

One day the Steward found that inscribed on one of the corner stones of the house it said there was a treasure to be had if one got the right key. "I have all the keys" the Steward said, "let us find the right one so we can obtain the Lord's treasure." So the Steward and all his men went down into the basement to go through his key collection and see if he had the right one. He had boxes and drawers full of keys but non were the right one.

In my dream I had the key in my pocket but I didn't let the Steward know I had it. Finally the Steward said, "I have the key but I don't want to show you the treasure." The Steward went up stairs to look at his pine trees, when suddenly there was a bright light from over the hill tops. I giant mushroom cloud unfolded itself in all its glory. There was all kinds of different colors of fire, smoke, and dust, in the cloud and a perfect ring rainbow on the top. Also the pillar under the cloud was made of bright fire. A ring of clouds from the explosion came rolling towards the house at incredible speeds. In fear and horror the Steward cried out, shook and broke the top off a small pine tree next to him, trying to undo what he had done. Clouds gathered over the house in all sorts of colors, browns and grays and more. They began to spin like a cyclone right over the house. Putrid brown and black rain began to fall. Suddenly the cyclone came down with fire in it and burned up the whole property. I and a few servants barely escaped by running into the basement. The Steward came running down the stairs too but with his coat tails on fire and he burned up on the stairs. Afterword the whole property was destroyed save the basement where we were."

It was about this time that a book in Leland's house caught my eye and I asked if I could borrow it, and he reluctantly said, yes. The book was entitled the Writings of Abraham and the Book of the Order. It purported to be a Translation by a Seer named Samuel. I read it from cover to cover and felt the Spirit very powerfully. I returned to Leland's house and found him in his study. I asked him who this Samuel guy was and he shrugged his shoulders and said that he was just some guy who lived on his farm out in the valley for a year. I asked if he knew anything else about him and Leland said "not really." I was deeply puzzled and decided that I needed to do more research on my own. I looked and looked all over the internet for any mention of these books or this elusive Prophet named Samuel. I finally found a digital copy online at Absalom.com. I also found another anti website that mentioned a man named John Bryant and the Church of Christ (Patriarchal). I was surprised as Leland had mentioned that this would be the name of our Church if we ever started one again. I had this to say about it:

I was sitting at my computer tonight the 30th of May and found a most interesting site called Absalom.com. I started to read an article about seer stones. As I read it, I was instantly wrapped up in a Vision, I no longer saw my computer in front of me but I was taken to another room in my house to where I had a chest. In the chest I had stored a stone I had found a long time ago as a teenager. One night as I was walking home in Provo Utah it had just rolled up to my foot, I picked it up. It was a rounded brown stone with a little of a chip out of one side of it, that almost looked like crystal or something. At this moment of Vision I saw the stone in the chest and a voice testified as out of heaven, "This is your seer stone, from before you were born." As I again appeared back in front of the computer, I was filled with such joy that I cannot express

my feelings. The chest was buried in the construction of my shelter in the other room, and so I resolved to get it out the next day.

The next day was Sunday the 31st of May. I woke up to Jim Quada, knocking at the door, I got up and let him in. We had planned to go to the Allred Meeting here in Cedar, so I began to get dressed. I got ready and Jim and I went to the meeting. It was a good meeting going to about 1:07 in the afternoon. After the meeting Bill Bulls invited us in another room for a discussion, as before the meeting I said we would like to have one. Jim and the other brethren talked about Keys for a while, and obviously didn't agree on the subject. Bill Bulls and his associates, explained their claim to the Keys and bore their honest Testimonies about Owen Allred and the work there. I took some time to tell them my story including my Revelation in the Mt. Timpanogos Temple. When I was done, one of the brethren said, "What a beautiful Testimony." They encouraged us to go home and pray about what they had said. We thanked them and left.

I could tell Jim really enjoyed it, seeing all his old friends and being at the meeting. We went to Jim's to do laundry and hang out. Jim and I were sitting in his living room talking about the meeting, Jim fell silent for a moment. I said, "What are you thinking?" He replied, "Praying, they asked us to pray, didn't they?" I said, "Yeah, they did." I said, "What's the answer?" Jim thought about it for a moment, and said, "I just had a realization, If you asked 'does Lemoine have the Keys', The answer would be 'Yes'. But if You asked, 'does he have all the Keys', the spirit would say 'No'." I nodded my head, and said, that sounds about right to me. Jim thought for a minute longer. I cut in and said, "I better not hear you say, you never got a revelation again, because I just saw you get one." Jim turned to me and said "What?" And I said, "Yeah, the spirit just told you what it would say." Then Jim just nodded his head. I want Jim to learn how to hear revelations, so any revelation he gets I am not going to shoot him down.

I went back home, and pondered upon everything that had happened that day. I wondered if I had handled the whole Allred experience with Jim right. As I was sitting there I got a Revelation. It said,

I the Lord have been displeased with thee of late this day. For why fall back into old ways? Just for making a mistake of words? And if you will continue in prayer thy sins shall be forgiven you, that ye may ascend on high. I have shown you in vision where you may find your seer stone, and it is expedient in me that you use this gift wisely. For behold if you walk proudly down your current path ye shall become a seer of darkness. For Behold I have given you the keys of this stone and I cannot rescind the same, but with what spirit you look into your stone will determine what you see and in which direction you are lead. For what profiteth a man if the devil shows him all he wants to see and he sees nothing that will benefit him?

Thus saith the Lord, I have shown you much concerning the sacred orders and have delivered some precious books into your hands including a portion of the sealed plates of Mormon. And through my servant you have learned some of my sacred ways. But what good shall this do if you are lead by the devil? Nothing! For behold it would only be to your greater damnation. But if you repent and walk circumspectly before me, these things shall be for your good. And I will continue to reveal the deeper things that you may come up into this order and be blessed. For behold all the blessings that the brother of Jared received ye may receive also if you continue in my ways, but if you do not continue in my ways, sin upon sin will overtake you which will lead you down to hell. Repent and work righteousness, that I may give my angels charge over you and ye may see them and gain eternal life.

(May 31st 2009)

I immediately went to my bed to pray, and prayed for several hours until I felt at peace. The next day I took apart a piece of my shelter to get to the chest holding my seer stone. I got it out with some trouble and brought it out into my living room. The chest was locked with a padlock to which I have lost the key. My wife and I looked for a hack saw but couldn't find it. The same day we went and visited Jim and Tyler and borrowed Tyler's hack saw. When we got home, I attempted to saw the lock open, but to my astonishment, no matter how long or hard I sawed it, there was not even a scratch upon the metal. I realized perhaps I was not yet to receive it and went into my bedroom to pray to the Lord. While I was praying I received a Revelation. It said,

Thus Saith the Lord, Walk not in crooked paths nor look for what ye ought not. Thus Saith the Lord, ye shall use the seer stone I have delivered into thy hands for mine work, and for nothing else you shall use it. I know thy heart how ye thought to help thy father with this gift, but know that I forbid it! For I have ordained for thy family to be in the circumstances in which they are. For if ye use the gift for what ye ought not, and against my will, it shall turn unto thy condemnation delivering thy soul unto Satan. But if ye do continue in my ways to walk in my paths and look only for my will even the translation of the Book of Joseph, then I shall bless thee. And if you continue faithful this shall be your work, and your work shall be my work, if ye will. Amen.

(June 1st 2009)

I prayed and cried unto the Lord, trying to repent with all my heart. I knew I had to purify myself and my life, if I was to be saved. For the fear of the Lord came upon me. But I had faith the Lord could save my soul, and I could indeed to the work of the Lord. For I wish to do nothing but to serve the Lord, and I desire no reward, the progressing of the work is more than a reward. For I glory in the work of the Lord. I prayed with all my heart in mighty prayer. And I

laid upon my bed and continued to pray, it was at this time I had a most glorious experience which I shall now recount for you.

"I was laying on my back saying my evening prayers, when suddenly I felt a tingling start in my feet and begin to work its way up my legs. I didn't move or try to stop it because of an overwhelming feeling of peace about me. Once the tingling made it up to my torso, my hands and arms began to do the same thing. At this point I wasn't even aware of my feet or legs anymore. Once the tingling made it up to my chest and neck, I began to see some kind of energy surrounding things around me, and even saw some shapes I didn't yet recognize. Once the tingling made it to my head, all mortal objects around me seemed to somewhat vanish and begin to fade away, I could tell they were still there but like they were not at all what commanded my attention. Instead, around me was a lot of grayness. Suddenly a light began to appear above my head which was white, but still seemed to embody the colors of the rainbow. It increased, but I didn't seem to know how to move or get closer to it. At that moment, two personages were suddenly standing next to me. Whether they were always there and I hadn't noticed them, or whether they had just appeared I didn't know. They wore bright white robes of priesthood, and one of them spoke to me. "Don't be afraid, you are not dead, but are seeing in the spirit." Then the other spoke, "Now you know and can perceive." At that moment I tried to move, but instantly snapped back into a normal mortal state, and found myself on my bed where I had been. My heart was beating. I raised my hands up on high and praised the Lord, for the experience. I now know without any doubt that the spirit world exists! The Gospel is not hard at all, it is easy to turn on the lights! However I praise my Lord forever, for I know none of this would be possible without the help of my God."

(June 1st 2009)

The next day Jim was over at our house, and I related the chest dilemma, and he suggested we use a pair of bolt cutters we might borrow from Rice Machine Co. I promptly said, If the Lord does not want the chest opened, we will not be able to do it. Jim said ok, and we went and borrowed the cutters, and he cut the lock right down the middle as the brass was not as hard as the hardened steel. We then brought the cutters back without opening the chest, for I knew I could not do so in Jim's presence. For I knew such might offend God.

When I got back and was alone, I knelt down and said a prayer, dedicating my life to the Lord and his work. I prayed that I might be worthy and that I might be forgiven. After finishing this prayer, I opened the chest. I unwrapped the cloth that was around the bag containing the stone. I took the little purple bag in my hand and began to open it. As the stone hit my fingers I felt a surge of energy go through my whole body. And the Spirit confirmed that I had again received the Gift of the Holy Ghost. I was amazed that I could suddenly see flaming tongues of energy all around me. I cupped my hands with the stone, and again began to pray. It was not a

moment before a personage appeared in front of me. His personage was so glorious that I could barely look upon him. And it was as if he had a crown of stars upon his head, his robes were pure white. He stood in the air and was so tall he almost reached the ceiling. His hair was brilliant white and his eyes like flaming blue. He spoke to me and said, "Samuel, I am \_\_\_\_\_, I seal the keys of this stone upon thy head forever. And say unto thee, thy sins are forgiven thee. As often as thou lookest with this stone thou mayest see in the Spirit. And the spirit world will be unlocked unto thy view. Now do ye the work of the Lord! And pretend to no other gift until thou translate the book of Joseph who was sold into Egypt. Amen." After he said "Amen", I reached out my hand to shake it and he held my hand. And I testify, I felt it just as real as shaking anyone's hand that is here. As I took my hand back, it seemed to be lightly coded in a little bit of some kind of white powder. I asked him a question and he showed me the sign. Suddenly he was gone.

A day or two later Leland, Garrett and I, were riding in the car. We talked about how all of us had gotten revelations telling us we and the Kingdom had to repent. I told them about my Pentecost Revelation and Leland asked me to read it at the feast. Several more days passed and we prepared for the feast. On the day of Pentecost I arose and praised the Lord that morning. We got ready and as my wife and I drove to Parowan we sang a dozen hymns to the Lord. I stopped by Jim's house and got some lettuce for salad. I went to Leland's and helped prepare until dinner. Brian complained about a ticket he got going over the mountain all during dinner. I hoped everyone would be in tune with the spirit enough to have a spiritual experience, but it seemed to be far from everyone's minds. After dinner we gathered in the front room and I read them my Pentecost Revelation. And Leland pointed out that Pentecost was a time of separation as well as Spiritual blessings. Leland taught on several subjects including how to get revelation. I felt the spirit very powerfully during the meeting but again it seemed to be far from many people's minds. Brian cut in quite a bit, and after Leland went to bed, Garrett said, "I don't think Leland was happy with the night." I said, "Why not?" half knowing the answer, as most people were light minded. He pointed to the spot where someone sat and said "right here." I then asked, "How can we help the Kingdom?" Garrett then said, "If Leland doesn't stop it and chastise, then it isn't our place, just keep the faith Sam." With that he and his family left. As my wife and I got in the car and looked up and saw a beautiful full moon in the misty clouds. I asked God, if I had done everything I could do, and if he found me blameless in regards to my Pentecost Revelation, and if I had appropriately sang praises to him amidst the circumstances. I got a powerful reassurance that the Lord was pleased and I felt at peace. As I drove home I looked once again at the moon almost to Cedar, and to my astonishment my spiritual eyes were again opened, and I perceived the levels of the spatial heavens. I saw that there were two altars between here and the moon. I saw the angels around them in the true order of prayer. I also perceived that there was a similar altar on the moon, and that the angels stood around it in the true order save there was also a Celestial being standing over that altar which was glorious like

the Sun. It was also made known to me that there were two more like altars, save only more glorious between the moon and the Sun. After seeing this vision, I was placed right back in the car and still driving fine. I went home and praised my God, for he is great and Glorious.

(June 6th, 2009)

The next day Jim Danny and Dad came over in the morning. Jim Quada, said he couldn't remember how to get to the AUB meeting that he wanted to go to. I stood my ground for a minute saying I wasn't going, then he started begging me, saying he promised and everything else. So I said, I will drop you off, and Jim agreed. So I took him and dropped him off and then came back home for an hour. After an hour I went to pick him up, it ran over so I sat in the car for a while. After the meeting was over I went up to get him. The same brethren that talked with us before wanted a word, and I agreed to that. Jim Quada, my Dad, Danny and I, went in the other room to have a word with them. I was very proud of Jim Quada, as he testified of Leland and didn't back down one little bit. Bill Bulls was very kind and nice, but there was a man there named John Warren, who rolled his eyes and got very upset. He started yelling about how Leland was a liar and everything else. Bull Bulls tried to calm him down saying we needed the spirit. I then testified of Leland, and that I knew he was a prophet, and how they had thrown out the prophets. Warren only got more upset, and finally I stood, and said, gesturing toward John Warren "But how brethren can you hear our message, when right here is the spirit of the devil." I then turning to Warren, said "And how can you think to get converts and act in this way?" At this point Warren got so upset we ended our little chat. Jim Quada and I thanked Bill and we all said bye. As we were out at the car Bill Bulls walked up to us, and said, "I apologize for the way John Warren acted," and then turning to me he said, "Sam you called it." We thanked him again and he gave us a warm goodbye. And I said, "Bill be safe, be prepared and wait and see the salvation of Israel." He told me he would, and we left. I felt what had happened was very constructive and according to the Spirit, which closes the whole AUB episode, and I am satisfied Jim will not wish to go back.

## Chapter 19

### The Cleansing, From Pentecost to Tabernacles

A few weeks later Jim Quada and I went on a mission to Missouri and Michigan. Just before this I decided to finally confronted Leland about John Bryant, and he admitted to have known him. I questioned him and he still wouldn't tell me a whole lot. He said "I have a trunk somewhere that we can get out and I will let you look through it." We finally got it out and after having some problems with finding the key I was inspired to try the key to the lawn mower which worked. Inside was a treasure of books of scripture and an old set of magazines called the



Voice of Zion. I took one copy of everything and carefully put it in a box to take and examine. I read a lot of this material when I was on my mission with Jim Quada.

We camped in a cave by Cassville and warned the people I knew of that town. We visited the Pointers and gave them survival information; we also visited brother James and warned him of the Tribulation. We headed up to Bolivar and stayed with the Smith's. They were very hospitable and I received a Revelation while staying with them. It said, I the Lord am bound to bless thee as thou obey my word. My son ye have asked me what to do or say that ye may be a blessing unto the Smiths, but behold I say unto you, remember ye not what I said unto mine Apostles when I sent them out? I verily commanded them that when they entered a house they should raise their hands on high and say, peace be unto this house. But if that house reject thee and cast thee out, ye shall dust off thy feet as a Testimony against them, and thy peace shall return unto thee again. Believe ye not what I said? Know ye not that I have all power in heaven and in earth? Believe ye not that if ye keep this mine ordinance I have power to save those whom ye bless? But verily I say unto you I do have this power and if ye perform this ordinance they shall be in mine hands saith the Lord, and thy garments will be spotless before me at the last day. Go forth do this mine work among my children, gather up my sheaves into the store house, and ye shall bring salvation to your soul. I am the God of Israel, Amen.

After receiving this revelation from the Lord, I immediately stood up in the room in which we were staying, and raising my hands on high said, "Peace be unto this house," three times while lowering them. As to bring the wisdom and understanding of the heavens upon them. Jim and I went out to do the work of the day, we went to Church, then to the Wilkins, Coolies and finally to see the Moaks that were not there. We gave a stack of pinkies to some guys who offered to help us pass them out by Waublau Mo. When we returned to the Smith's that night, to my surprise and joy the Smiths were looking at properties in Utah to buy as a family. We saw sister Moak and her son the next day. They were receptive and then we moved on. Our trip brought us to Indianapolis where we met one of Leland's old friends. And then headed to Michigan where we spent a week visiting Jim Quada's Family members. We read some Church of Christ (Patriarchal) pamphlets and talked about the gospel. Toward the end Jim asked me a question which lead into a discussion about obedience to the Lord and Jim maintained the position that he didn't want to have to obey God for all eternity, but that he wanted to make commandments for himself. I told him the danger of that position and still he kept on. One morning during his depression as he was napping in the tent I went a distance off to be alone. I walked across a field that is behind his cousin's property and came to a forested clearing. I walked through this clearing and coming to an over grown pile of rocks I stopped being overcome with the Spirit of the Lord. In that moment the Lord made it known unto me that this was a Nephite altar built and dedicated by Moroni himself. I knelt making the signs of the priesthood and began to pray before God according to His holy order. And as I asked the Lord

to please hear me, I was suddenly visited by an angel that slinked out of the woods and circling the altar and taking a position behind me began to tempt me to ask for a sign. He seemed to flaunt himself like he had some kind of position and glory. His arrogance and presumptuousness gave him away and I knew almost immediately who was in my presence. I raised my arm to the square and commanded he leave in the name of Jesus Christ my Lord. As I ended my command he was gone so fast I didn't even see where he got to. In that moment the peace and glory of the Lord stood about a foot above the Altar and I praised His holy name, forever and ever. I came out of the woods uplifted beyond expression and afterwards refused to argue with Jim about petty opinions regarding what he thinks he wants to do in eternity. I asked if he wanted to grow manna fields on the Sun, and he retorted he would rather grow corn in Michigan, and I told him to be careful what he wishes for. After the reunion was waning, we left and I did the long haul back to Parowan Utah. At the next meeting we gave our mission report.

A few days after our safe arrival from the mission field, Garrett called me and asked if I could translate a word he had received from a dream, and also asked if I could come over to talk with him about it. Briefly he told me, in his dream he was looking through a greenish Stone at some ancient text and in this text he saw this word, 000000000, and again asked me if I could translate it. I translated it with my Seer Stone and found it to say, "Land of Pacumini, The excess where the river water bends." After making this translation I went to Garrett's house to make my report. We discussed it for a time and agreed to go out to Pacumini to look for it. After talking at his house for about an hour we went over to Leland's, so he could witness what we had been talking about. I gave Garrett some keys of using Seer Stones and gave permission to use my Seer Stone in the Endeavour. Leland sent us with his blessing and told us to return and report. We headed up to the canyon above Pacumini and began to look with our mortal brains. We found nothing where we first stopped. Feeling the Spirit we both agreed to go down stream to where the river actually bent by the excess, understanding the excess to mean the entrance into the mountains. At that spot we found a mound of dirt and I used my Seer Stone and perceived there was another Seer Stone three feet under that spot. We dug for about twenty minutes and found it. Fortunately it worked very well but unfortunately it was not Garrett's Stone. We then decided to go look in the river itself by the spot. We looked and looked, and when we were about to leave, I suddenly seized by some Spiritual impulse reached down in the river where we had already been. And upon straitening up I put a greenish Stone in Garrett's hand who then testified the Spirit of the Lord had fallen upon him. We returned late for Thursday meeting, and related our report to Leland, once we found ourselves to be alone.

Around this time Brian Johnson started bringing his friend Bruce Rose and his wife Autumn to meetings. The Rose family had several daughters and was a really nice family. In process of time they decided to get baptized and they brought Autumn's brother Sunny with them to meetings who decided to get baptized also. During this time period I was busily compiling

books of scripture Translated by John Bryant and his followers for a volume I called the Priceless Gems. I was also preparing to start our own Magazine called the Voice of Zion Magazine. I often asked Leland if he had any idea where John Bryant, which is also named Samuel went and he would always say he had no idea. I also made a website for our magazine on free-webs called Voice of Zion. Leland didn't really like the idea but I told him that I had to preserve these precious translations somehow and make them available for people to find. As I was busily doing all this I unfortunately probably missed important "political" developments all around me. One day Tyler took me aside and said, "Sam why are you doing this?" I said "I have to, to preserve John Bryant's work." He then said something that surprised me, which went something like this, "Sam Leland is the important one around here, and we don't want to do anything that will detract from him, now would we?" I thought this was just a spout of immaturity and I went on about my work.

Bruce Rose, Autumn and Sunny were all progressing wonderfully and everything was going well. I came out with my first issue of the magazine and had it proof read by Leland. Leland in turn showed some of the articles to the other members. Bruce was upset about something I said about Masons in my Preparing for your Endowments article. I found out that Bruce was a Master Mason, and we had a good heart to heart talk about what to change. I began to revise my article but the next day Leland and I were in Cedar City and he said that we were going to print the magazines that day. I said that I hadn't finished revising it yet, but he said it was more important to get them printed and mentioned that he was paying for it. Bruce wasn't too happy but I told him I did all I could do, at this point Leland wanted Bruce to go distribute them in Orderville where he and Brian were from. I could tell Bruce didn't like it but he smiled and took the magazines.

One day Leland came and picked me up to go to the store with him, he pulled over on a side street and pulled out a piece of paper and said, "read this." It was a Revelation to Garrett, basically it said that when a couple had their Holy Anointings that they could participate in acts of affection with other members of the Holy Order of the Anointed but that they could not have intercourse. I thought it was an interesting Revelation and said, "Yeah I can believe it, why?" At this point Leland said that his problem with it was that he knew those who had their Second Anointings could have intercourse etc. I said I could believe that also, but I said that I think everyone is missing the point that plural marriage can be both for men and for women and that there was no reason not to get married if a couple liked each other, and that righteous people should have their free-agency in this matter. Leland didn't really like that idea but he didn't say anything else. A few days later I was sitting on our cement porch at our Cedar City apartment looking at the stars and I asked upon that very subject. I began to get a Revelation about the difference between the Aaronic and Melchizedek Laws, and then I was suddenly swept away in a vision. I was standing in a beautiful middle-eastern looking palace and I saw

the wedding precession of Moses when he was married to Jethro's daughter. After the doors were closed and the wedding feast commenced with their close confidants and fellow sheiks, I saw that their version of what was appropriate was a lot different from the western conception of things. This didn't really bother me but the Angel explained the exact Laws pertaining to intimacy and what governed them, which is not only the Ordinances but also Free-agency and Love. After this I had a much more clear understanding and I thanked God for it.

I wrote out my vision and I brought it to Leland who actually liked it and insisted on showing it to everyone who was ready for it, which I had no problem with. He then called Bruce and Autumn in and showed them. I could tell when they came out of his study that something was not quite right. Bruce later told me that it wasn't the content of my vision that made them uncomfortable but more or less the motives in presenting it to them. I wasn't sure if I should have let the cat out of the bag but I also realized that Leland and Garrett were already going in this direction and that God must have a purpose in giving me the vision that he did.

It was around this time that I was sleeping one night in my bed in Cedar when suddenly I looked over and there was a man standing by my bedside. He was a stocky man, but gentle looking and he was wearing temple robes. I shook his hand and he introduced himself as the Prophet Ezra. We talked for a time and he revealed to me that Zechariah 3:9 was about to be fulfilled and that I was to start a Council of the Seers and that through this council many precious things would be revealed. He then gave me the Keys of the Interpretation of Scripture, and of bringing forth Translations. Before he left he said, "Look!" And I looked and I was surrounded by the Spirits of Just Men Made Perfect. Some of them introduced themselves as my great, great grandfathers etc. After this was accomplished Ezra bid me farewell and vanished, and the vision closed leaving me alone in my room.

The Spirit indicated to me that I should pull out an old copy of the Improvement Era which I had and to look at the issue with the Joseph Smith Papyri in it. I did so and I received a Revelation that the time had come when I should translate the Book and Writings of Joseph. Our friend Yaroslav Kazmine had sent me a copy of the Book of Joseph that Joseph Smith had translated and I only re-translated a few things that were lost in re-transcribing etc. After this I continued to translate the Writings of Joseph from the Papyri through my Seer Stone. After I was done with the Writings of Joseph I learned through the Seer Stone that there was also a Book of Ephraim which came after it. I released these to Leland, and he really liked them. He wanted to severely edit the Books I had translated, and I only approved a few grammatical corrections and explanative words. But it bothered me that Leland seemed to have such little regard for the way it was delivered especially since he did not have a Seer Stone. I over looked this, and only approved him to change a few things. The translations were well received by everyone and Bruce and Brian really admired them. I had now finished the Priceless Gems, two Voice of

Zion publications and finished two new translations and things couldn't be better. It was at this time that Leland started to really trust me and let me in on more of his secret councils. Carolyn and I progressed according to our own free agency and received many wonderful and precious things. It was also at this time that Leland, took Garrett and I aside and said, "Sam and Garrett the Lord has indicated that you are both worthy and ready to receive your Second Anointings, but the rule is that you have to have three wives to be Anointed. Therefore I will make you two Patriarchs just as fast as you can get three wives." I thought this was a little strange but I knew it was the Fundamentalist tradition.

On September 25th 2009 I received the following Revelation from God when the Spirit rested very powerfully upon me. "My son Samuel, Thou hast entered into mine Sacrament, this day. Mine disciples understood not when I said, "Drink, this is mine blood of the new testament, which is shed for you." Wherefore listen mine son, this is mine Holy Grail, even the blood of the New Testament which Mary mine beloved brought forth for you. Thou art mine flesh and blood, thou art mine son. Now mine son it was needful that ye had the knowledge that mine Angel did bring thee taken from thee for a time, until thou didst fully come into mine Communion. All of mine children have the Key in their blood, wherefore they come to this knowledge when they truly partake of mine Sacrament. Wherefore all those who are truly mine children will also be enlightened as they partake of mine symbolic sacrament. Moses did tell the people to eat nothing save mine communion that they might learn to be a Holy people. Wherefore, for this cause said he to eat no pork and also other things, for verily those animals are a symbol of the beast's lineage, because they were unfit to be a symbol of me and my Father. Did I not say it plainly enough for all people to see? For verily I said, "This is mine flesh and blood!" Wherefore the hearts of men are hardened and they cannot see what is right before them. Now thou knowest the meaning of these things, and of this revelation, wherefore store it up in thine heart, and it shall be a fountain of living water unto thee forever. Amen."

Now sometime after all this happened I received a Revelation to translate a book called the Book of Odin. I thought that sounded wonderful and I asked where I should translate it from. God told me to translate it directly through my Seer Stone and that he would open up the heavenly books for me to read from, and that it was not always necessary for there to be a physical record, but there only needed to be physical records when it was to be revealed to the unbelieving. So I started translating it and I finished four chapters before I decided to go show Leland. There was many amazing and wonderful things contained in it and I was really excited to show him, but to my dismay Leland had a serious problem with it. He was alright with it at first but then I asked him what he thought about the first chapter. He re-read it and said "what about it?" I then took it upon myself to explain it to him and he got really upset, it having to do with polyandry. At that point Leland said, "Sam you have translated enough, two books is good so now I am commanding you to stop translating." I said, "Leland, I cannot stop translating

until God tells me to stop. God told me to do it, so I must do it." I then thought to myself, what makes him think he has the authority over something he doesn't even have keys for? Leland then told me that he was my Priesthood leader and that I had to stop. I left and felt really depressed. Several times I went back and asked Leland what his problem with it really was. He just said that a man needs three of his own wives to get his Second Anointing that are only his wives and no one else's. And I said, "but if he has three wives hasn't he fulfilled the law regardless of whether or not they are also married to someone else?" And Leland said, "No they have to all be just his! Now I want you to go and pray about this and get a revelation that I am right and that a man needs three wives of his own."

So I went up to my study where I had been doing translations and prayed about it. Now during this time of revisiting the issue I had stopped translation on Odin. I finally got a Revelation from the Lord, but he did not tell me that Leland was right. Instead the Lord chastised me for stopping work on Odin and said he was withdrawing the Spirit and the gift of Seership for a time because I had listened to Leland and stopped the translation which the Lord had commanded me to do. What followed was a bitter time of repentance and prayer. No doubt Leland thought I was sober because of arguing with him, when in actuality I did not tell him the real reason. Furthermore the Lord told me that the three wife rule as Leland believed it, was just one of Leland's fundamentalist traditions and was false.

A few days later Garrett came up to me and said, "Sam I think we need to make a Seer Stone bank, a safe place where we can keep all the Seer Stones we find. (We had gone on several more trips up to Pacumani and gathered a number of Seer Stones.) I said "sure wherever," and Garrett said "how about my place." I agreed that, that would be fine and so he kept all of them there except for my personal Stone. A few days later Garrett came to me like he had a problem but he didn't want to say at first what it was. I said "what?" And finally he said that he just wasn't sure his Stone worked anymore. I said, "What do you mean?" At this point I could suddenly see that his countenance had fallen somewhat, and I could see a kind of darkness around him. He then said, "I just don't know, I don't believe everything I see." He then smiled and kind of laughed little. I said, "well I don't know what to tell you then." At that point he said, "But now it just doesn't work anymore." At this point I perceived that he had looked for something he ought not or else he didn't believe what God was trying to show him. I felt bad for him but hoped his gift would return. I just said, "Well pray and do your best." It was around this time that the Spirit came back to me and the Lord forgave me but said that he had some other Books for me to Translate before I returned to the translation of the Book of Odin. I was endlessly grateful for the mercies of the Lord and I covenanted that I would never again obey Leland over the voice of the Lord. One time I was explaining this to Garrett and he said, "Are you sure you didn't just lose the Spirit for not listening to Leland?" And I said, "Yes I am sure, that is what the Lord said. I did what Leland wanted and I lost the Spirit, a man is not

damned for his beliefs but for his actions." And then Garrett said, "Well I don't know then" and walked away. A few weeks later I came and asked for one of the Stones because Bruce was asking about Seership and I wanted to start training him. Garrett said he was busy and had to go to the store or something. A day or two later I confronted him again and he had a different excuse, and then finally he said, "Well maybe we should ask Leland if I can lend you one." At that point I went back to my house and prayed and looked into my Seer Stone and perceived that Leland had told Garrett that I was a handful already and the last thing he needed was a bunch of Seers running all over the place!

"And the Lord said, I will prepare unto my servant Gazelem, a stone, which shall shine forth in darkness unto light, that I may discover unto my people who serve me, that I may discover unto them the works of their brethren; yea, their secret works, their works of darkness, and their wickedness and abominations." (RBM Alma 17:55)

A few days later Brian called Leland up and asked him a question about Canaan stealing the Garments of Noah, since the topic was mentioned in the Writings of Abraham which I had recently published in the Priceless Gems. When he got off the phone he told me I should go talk to them about it. (During this time Brian had invited a Jewish lady named Catharine to visit him as he was looking to become a polygamist. She was a dark Jew and I didn't feel comfortable with her at all.) I consented to go visit them and drove over the mountain and Brian offered to let me stay the night. He also told me that I should try and convince Catharine to stay since she was depressed and was thinking about leaving. He returned to his mechanic shop and I was left in the house with Catharine. I didn't feel like trying to convince her of anything so I just kept my mouth shut. Later that night Bruce, Brian and myself visited and had a good time. I went to bed on his hida-bed and had an amazing vision. Here is the account I wrote just a few days after that event.

"I was sleeping in Brian Johnson's front room when suddenly I was in the Spirit, and an Angel of the Lord was standing before me. He was just as glorious as all the other Angels I have ever seen, and his robes were white as Snow.

I reached out my hand and grasped his; he held my hand and said, "What is that?" I said, "It is the Third token of the Aaronic Priesthood." "Has it a name?" "It has," I said. "Will you give it to me?" He asked. I said, "I cannot, for I have not yet received it. For this reason I have come to converse with the Lord through the Veil." Then the Angel said, "You shall receive it through the Veil."

Suddenly a light appeared as a pillar over our heads dividing the darkness. And I was bathed in the most glorious light unlike I can describe. I walked into the passage of Light and suddenly saw a scene from before I was born. Everything looked so familiar I could not believe

it. I was in a council room and heard a discussion regarding the plan of the Father. The Angel described that I had been in this very spot before the world was. I heard a voice say, "Mine son; thou cannot come up hither until thou descend below."

Upon hearing this fear struck my heart, and the Angel said fear not for it shall be opened unto thee as but for a small moment.

At this point the Angel took me down into a dreadful darkness, which I perceived to be under the earth. I said to the Angel, why is hell under the earth? And he said unto me, "Know ye not that the wicked seek to hide themselves from the glory of the Lord? But they cannot do it, for His Holy Eye pierceth the whole earth! Fear not the darkness, for the Lord can see through it, and ye shall not be forgotten and left in this place.

At this point the Angel vanished, but I could still feel his presence by my side. As the Angel took me lower and lower as to the edge of the abyss, my prayer was continually, Oh Lord Father Adam, wash mine garments in the blood of the Lamb, and glory be unto thee forever and ever and ever more!

There came a point where I could hear the cries of the Sons of Perdition and such chills vexed my spirit that I cried out and commended my whole soul into the care of Father Michael and into the care of Jehovah and of the Elohim and in the name of Jesus Christ. And as I said this confessing the greatness of the Son forever, the Angel of the Lord snatched me out with a powerful arm. And as he held my hand he said, now that thou hast commended thy whole soul into the Father's care the atonement can have place in thee and work in thee that thou mayest see the Celestial worlds by the grace of his Son!

The Angel took me upward away from the lake of darkness and burning into the crust of the earth. There I saw large caverns that were gathering places for the spirits of the dead, and I saw how most wondered around in a state of confusion, and how some taught different religions. There were many Orthodox teachers of Catholicism and of many Churches and even people from the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, but they seemed as powerless as the rest. At this point the Angel took me higher and higher and the higher we went the less confused the spirits were. I saw how some were being taught by Angels and others were climbing higher and higher toward the Light. At this point we came out from under the earth and the Angel continued upward bringing me higher and higher into the atmosphere.

The Angel beginning to put back on his mantle of light after being invisible to the naked eye brought me up and up, past the cloud cover and ascending with my hand in his, took me up into the upper blue skies. The Angel said, this is the first Heaven, and as we ascended through the atmosphere I saw many warring spirits of devils who attempted to guard the earth and held keys to stop those who belongeth to them.



As we left the atmosphere behind I saw what the Astronauts are always talking so much about. The earth was beautiful beyond description, and I was surprised how much brighter it was than I expected. As we traveled through space we came to an un-hewn stone or Asteroid which is an altar of the Lord. I saw a group of Angels standing upon it in the true order of prayer and my guide took me beyond it, when suddenly I felt a presence of a glory which I could not see while standing in outer space with the Angel, as if I was being exposed to some unseen light or power. And the Angel said, "You have been introduced into the Terrestrial world."

As I looked back I perceived in the spirit that there was a covering over the earth, making it a Telestial planet. I have come to believe that this shield or blanket is the electro magnetic field produced by the earth. The Angel then brought me to another altar and from there to the Moon.

The Angel said unto me, "The moon is a Terrestrial Planet because it is exposed to energy from the Sun that the earth is not. Wherefore there are those planets that produce Terrestrial energy and those that are simply exposed to it." At this point he said, look and I looked and I saw in vision many planets that are opaque and do not give off their own light, but are great giants in space, giving off the glory of a Terrestrial world. And as we came to the Moon, I saw a Temple and an Altar made of silver, where Angels continually praised the Lord of Glory.

And he took me from the Moon to the fourth altar which is called Mercury by astronomers, and on Mercury I saw an even more glorious Temple and Altar made of some alloy, and even more glorious Angels praising the Lord of Glory. Now after he showed this altar unto me he brought me nigh even unto a glorious Terrestrial sphere so close to the Sun that the Sun was a great glorious disk in its sky. And the Angel said unto me, "This is the highest of the Terrestrial worlds, for it rolleth upon the curtain that divideth the Terrestrial from the Celestial plane.

And upon this sphere, I saw a temple, made out of pure gold. And the Angel said unto me, this is the Zion of Enoch, which was taken into Heaven even nigh unto the throne of Adam. And when Adam ascended, he did also raise up Enoch and his people, and took up his abode among them during his ascension unto his throne of Power and Glory.

Wherefore as Jesus walked among your people, so did Adam walk among them, and Jesus also. And you shall visit this place one day just as my Servants have done if you are faithful to this vision and to thy covenants. However," the Angel went on, "I have been commissioned to take you nigh even unto the Sun so that you can testify that you have seen the Father.

I again began to tremble, insomuch that I said unto the Angel, "Oh friend, how can I be permitted to see the Father, is not the Son the express image of the Father?"

Whereupon the Angel said, "Have you not seen the Son in the Spirit?" "I have" I replied. "Then you shall see that they are one, even as Stephen saw them."

At this point I was taken so close to the Sun that I could not bear the glory and the light, and I thought that I might be burned up and cease to exist. And I said, "Oh Lord have mercy for I am impure and I fear that I might be destroyed!" Whereupon, the Spirit fell upon me and suddenly I looked as though I was an Angel, and the energy and light coursed through me as it were that I perished not. And all my fear of the Sun left me and excitement coursed through me.

And I was brought down through the atmosphere of light, and saw spheres upon which, served Angels continually worshiping the Lord of Hosts. I also saw great beings flying in the midst of the Sun's heavens. And I understood what was meant by the Prophet Joseph Smith when he said, that the gate of the Celestial Kingdom was a ring of fire. There were great plumes of pure light and glory many times larger than many planets, and I saw glorious rainbows reflecting off them.

I also saw that these great plums came from great holes in the atmosphere of the Sun, and that we descended through one that was like encircling flame and I cannot describe the awe. At length we came to a great sea of burning glass whereupon I saw that this sea bowed like great planet sized bubbles. Upon which the Gods sailed their Seer Ships. I saw that their thrones and ships were also made of crystal glass and they looked down into the glass. And their throne was wisdom and knowledge, and all things were before them. For behold, he looked into his white stone and she into hers. Wherefore great beasts and angels flew in the midst of the sea, and worshiped the Arch-Angels of the Covenants forever and ever! And I heard a voice saying, these are the Adamah, Glory, glory, glory be unto them forever and ever and ever! And rainbows graced their heads. For in the glass were the images of eternal fires, continually before them. And their eyes shone as burning stars, and their whiteness and glory was indescribable.

And I was taken under this sea which did not seem as solid as I had thought, and through the white fire which was indescribable insomuch that I cannot write it. The best I can say is that it was like pure flowing white energy, and we traveled through this heaven for a long ways. And I saw a land flowing with white fields, and orchards of trees shining so brilliantly that they looked as though they were every color of the rainbow. And the Angel said, "This is the abode of the Cherubim and the Seraphim, which Seraphim continually make spirit children for the Adamah." And I also saw beautiful palaces, in which those spirits lived in glorious burnings.

And all things were made of precious stones. And I was taken into a first palace which had reflected in its sealing the burning stars magnified from a far off and the floor was made of

crystal tile work. I was then taken to a Second Palace which was full of fire even brighter than the first and the ceiling flowed as with fire. And the Third Palace was indescribable as it was a giant square that looked like pure sapphire and shone far brighter than anywhere else on the surface of the Sun, and I comprehended that this Temple was the New Jerusalem the Heavenly City but I did not enter therein. Wherefore the Angel said, "Thou hast seen the Celestial World. But I have not yet shown thee what I was sent to reveal unto thee. I cannot take thee unto Kolob, but look and the Father shall open up the vision of it unto you."

Wherefore I looked, and behold, I saw the Eloheim sitting upon their thrones on Kolob, which had the appearance of a Heavenly World even more glorious than the surface of the Sun. And I perceived that they were both male and female. For they had incorporated the virtues of Wisdom and Knowledge in such unity and perfection, that their spiritual blood had developed their bodies into a higher state of being. They had the appearance of the most beautiful women I had ever beheld, and yet they had the parts and strength of a man also; strong yet tender, powerful yet soft, I cannot describe it, only to say they were perfect, the Fathers and Mothers of worlds. Just the sight of them caused pure ecstasy to fill my whole body, and it was as pure pleasure in every sense of the word, but I felt it in every fiber of my being. And I saw that they both were perfectly the same in gender, they being both male and female and I longed to be with them.

I saw that man and women are but embryos of this state of the Eloheim, and that as millions of semen die in the creation of a person, so also it was more important that millions must perish then for one of these beings not to exist. And I also perceived that the Eloheim allow evil to exist, but not among them, nor could it, for it could not abide in their glory. I also saw that they were in a continual state of pure joy.

And I saw Jehovah run up to the throne and stand at Eloi's right hand, and I saw that he was also developed into a new creation, and the Father said unto him, "Thou hath finished the race, thou hast begun thy course!"

And I said, unto the Angel, of what race do they speak? And what course has he begun? And the Angel replied, the same race that the Apostle Paul talked about. He hath finished the race and begun his eternal course throughout the heavens, unto higher and higher places, ascending forever and ever worlds without end! The Seraphim and Cherubim, desire to look into it, but like the Prophet Joseph said, they have set up two many stakes." I was also made to understand, that I was seeing the past, and that Jehovah had been an Eloheim since before our world began, and that our Father Michael had also again attained unto this state, even though it had been hidden from me when I saw the Solar Ships.

The Angel went on to say, "This is also the state in which your spirit lived before God made his children male and female. Wherefore through the fall there was a separation of these principles. For in order to go into the lone and dreary world, the Adamah, had to forsake these principles so man and women might be separate, or else the plan of the Father would have been eternally frustrated. Wherefore the Eloheim are upon Kolob and upon Oliblish and upon Shinah which thou hast seen and upon endless other Celestial worlds, which are nigh unto the Throne of God. These Eloheim are the first of the Eloheim upon burning Suns, as the Adamah are the first man upon the earth. And there are higher states still, but if they were opened up unto you at this time, it would frustrate the designs of God in your salvation."

As I awoke I was still wrapped up in the ecstasy of the vision. I know what I saw and I say this in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen."

The next day I went out with Bruce to help him find a Seer Stone. I had not brought my Seer Stone with me and so I just encouraged Bruce to go on a hike with me and look at any rock that looked interesting to him. He didn't find a Stone that worked but we had a fun time together. I went back to Parowan that day and found Leland in his study. I said, "Leland, I had a vision while I was in Orderville." He asked me to continue, and I said, "Brace yourself for this one, because it is a big cat!" He said okay and asked me to go on. I explained my vision to him and the first thing he did was give me a disapproving look and opened his Bible and asked me to open mine and started citing all the scriptures he could possibly think of that indicated that God is a man! I chuckled and said, "I saw it with my own eyes Leland and I am not going to deny it." At this point he just said, "Well I don't believe it, God is a man!" I left back to Cedar and during that week Garrett's wife Alaina had a dream where she kept seeing the scripture that said, "And God made them male and female" until she realized that it was talking about the fact that God made Adam as a hermaphrodite. During that same time I had written up the vision I had and given a copy of it to Leland. At that point Alaina went into Leland's study and explained her dream to him. According to Alaina he just smiled and said, "Oh yes, I have known about that for thirty years", and then let her see a copy of my vision. Around this same time I told Garrett about it and he got a confirming Revelation that what I told him was true, and he got this Revelation before Leland had taken him aside and talked to him about it. During the next meeting Leland looked somewhat annoyed and said that there was some new doctrines circulating that should not be discussed. I could clearly tell that Leland was just hoping this new doctrine would go away. However it was founded in the mouth of two and then three witnesses. Some weeks later Leland told me point blank that he didn't believe it at all!

One day I went over to visit Garrett, he was down in his office and so I went down to visit him. I sat in the chair next to his desk and looked down to see the bag of Seer Stones by my feet. We talked a little and then I just without any concern of what he thought reached down took a Seer

Stone out of the bag and said, "I am taking this for Bruce, thanks." Garrett suddenly looked uncomfortable but said nothing. I got up and told him to have a nice day and walked out. Later that week Bruce came for meeting and I gave him the Seer Stone with some verbal directions and cautions on how to use it. At first he could see some energy of differing colors in it which I explained was normal right before you ask to see something. I told him to dedicate himself and then to use it by asking in his mind what he needed or desired to see. He thanked me for it and we parted ways. A few days later I went into Leland's study and he said, "Sam, Garrett tells me that you took a Seer Stone and gave it to Bruce." I said, "Yes, that is right. That is why we consecrated the Stones into the Seer Stone bank, so that we could use them as we had need of them." Nothing else was said on this matter for quite some time and I had great hopes in Bruce that maybe he would be able to become a Seer.

Now the time of Tabernacles was fast approaching and we were all in good spirits for the most part. Brian and Bruce asked if they could camp in Orderville instead of coming to Parowan to camp and Leland said that they could, although they did come for the events and meetings. Sunny on the other hand decided to stay in Parowan since he was going to school in Cedar City at the time. I told him that I would share a tent with him and Danny and my Dad stayed in my Dad's van. Bruce also started bringing a new family by the name of the Brinkerhoff's to meetings around this time and they were also a very nice family. Leland was also inspired during this meeting to ordain Garrett unto the Apostleship. Sister Brinkerhoff was so impressed with the ordination that she asked to be baptized the next day. We all had a good time at dinner and Sunny and I stayed up really late talking about the mysteries of the Gospel. Sunny also had a fiancé that he started bringing to meetings around this time. She was very nice and came from a traditional Mormon family. Her family was already upset that Sunny was looking into other things and she herself was not sure about what to believe. A few nights later at one of the dinners during Tabernacles Leland made a joke that included a swear word. I remember seeing that she was not impressed at all, neither was the newly baptized Brinkerhoffs. Bruce also told me after dinner that it was very inappropriate for him to say that in front of her. Brian was upset about it also and they all left unhappy. The next night Brian said that they would just stay at Orderville and have a dinner there. I could tell that tensions were rising and I just generally stayed aloof from it and tried to befriend everyone. Leland pulled me aside during Tabernacles and said that he intended to start up the Church of Christ (Patriarchal) again seeing that we had so many new converts and asked me to be the President of the Church. I said sure I will do it. After the Water ceremony on the last day everyone parted ways.

During Tabernacles Leland had been reading the Writings of Joseph again and he found a passage that said the Holy Order would be established in the last days before the Coming of the Lord. After that Leland decided to take a trip to Orderville. I did not go with him to Orderville

but the effects of that trip were profound. Leland returned and said to Garrett and I, "The people at Orderville are really coming along, and they even told me that they are ready to live the Holy Order." I said, "What do you mean Leland?" And Leland said, "They are all good with you know what." At this point I suddenly got a feeling in my gut that something wasn't right so I decided to email Bruce and ask him about it. Bruce was confused at my email and said that they at Orderville had said no such thing. In fact they were upset and confused about what Leland had said and were still thinking about what they should do. I asked him what he meant and Bruce basically told me that Leland had asked for their wives. And that he had not just asked for them but said that since the Nuclear War was coming soon that they needed to join the Holy Order soon so that they would be saved at the last day. I said, "What!?" I immediately went down to Leland's study and asked him, "did you really ask for their wives? And did you really say they had to do it before the nuclear war that you think is going to happen this winter?" And Leland said, "No, that is a lie. I never asked for their wives." At this point I decided to just stay quiet and watch what was about to unfold. Emails started flying back and forth between Brian, Garrett, Bruce and Leland. The Orderville people's story was always the same; that Leland had asked for their wives point blank and had even said many crude comments and threatened them with not being saved in the coming nuclear war. Garrett and Leland always said that he never said that and that they were prideful and had many sins to repent of, and that they should stop listening to lying spirits etc.

Right around this time Catherine decided to leave and Brian went ballistic on Leland accusing him of driving her away since he refused to Seal them. (Although I agreed with Leland on the not Sealing them part since she was a really dark Jew.) On the other hand I did not say my opinion on the "if Leland asked for their wives or not" issue, but inside I could easily perceive what had happened. Instead when I was asked my opinion, I would say something like, "If you are indeed telling the truth Leland than I am glad, because you know that pressuring them for their wives, and not taking their free-agency into consideration would be a grievous sin!" Whenever I would make a statement like this Leland would smile grimly at me and try not to lose his temper. I knew that secretly Garrett, Leland and Tyler did not really care about free-agency, but just about whatever Leland thought or wanted. So I just stayed aloof from the whole matter and watched months of hateful emails be exchanged. One meeting Leland came out and said that he had, had a dream of Joseph Smith and Joseph Smith told him that Brian was released from his callings etc. And this went on as the sole subject of conversation for quite some time.

## Chapter 20

### An increase in Light and Knowledge

One day Leland called me into his study and told me that our friend Yaroslav Kazmin was emailing him way too much and he just wanted me to take care of him. He told me that Garrett had been his pen pal for a while and he was sick of it too. I said, "Sure I would love to email with Yaroslav." And I wondered what in the world their problem with him was. [I am still wondering, because he is awesome!] I started emailing back and forth with him and we had a great time. One day he told me of a vision he had of an old man with white hair, a white tunic with golden fringes and with a sword. Yaroslav said that he thought this was an ancient ancestor of the Russian people and wanted to know who he was. I looked into my Seer Stone and received the following Revelation on November 10th 2009.

Thus saith the Lord God of Israel Ponael, is his name. Wherefore the sword is that of the four winds used by Moses in the destruction of those wicked Anakim who infested the land. Wherefore this shall be the preface to his book which shall come forth by the hand of the Almighty.

And wo be unto him who shall mock this work for it has been set forth by the hand of God. Wherefore it is the record of Ponael as he and his people traveled from the land of Assyria northward even unto the land of Magog, wherefore they are of my people Israel.

And Ponael shall stand with his posterity upon Mount Zion and be counted with the Gods, for such he hath earned through his faithfulness by the grace of Christ even Adam God, looking forward unto His Son Jesus, and admonishing his own sons in righteousness.

Wearing the tunic of the Holy Priesthood and traveling through the land of Danta. This is the word of the Lord unto thee mine sons Samuel and Yaroslav, be patient and sober looking forward unto this account which shall come forth in mine own due time, even so. Amen.

Once I received this Revelation I excitedly told Yaroslav that a new book would be translated soon. We talked often about it and many other visions and Revelations we were receiving. Time passed and things cooled down quite a bit. I received a Revelation to begin translating the Book of Ponael and so I did. I did not share it with Leland as I knew he didn't want more translations emerging; and so I mostly kept it to myself and a few close friends including Yaroslav. After a little while there was some exciting things revealed that I did mention to Leland and he didn't seem to take much interest in it, or any new translations.

Time passed and I eventually went to Leland and asked if I could go through his old boxes up stairs to see if I could find any more old Church of Christ (Patriarchal) stuff. He said, "Yea sure what's mine is yours." So I went up and spent hours going through boxes which was very fruitful and I found many Voice of Zion magazines etc. That night I stayed at Leland's house and during the night I had a dream that I found a black binder that had many revelations in it. When I awoke I tried to remember where the binder was in my dream. I looked in an off to

the side place under some stairs that looked like the place in my dream and low and behold I found a black binder. I opened it up and to my great excitement it was the Covenants and Commandments of the Evangelical Church of Christ, [which was the name of the Church after John Bryant went to Oregon.] I took it and began reading it from cover to cover. While I was reading it I was picking certain revelations to compile in a new project I was doing that I was going to call the Revelations of the Kingdom of God. A few days later I came across a Revelation that caught my eye. According to John's Revelation women who were sealed to a man of a certain level in the Priesthood, could not only use that Priesthood to bless her kids etc.; but according to the Revelation could also hold callings in the Church. I was so intrigued that I went to Leland's study and said, "I found an interesting Revelation." Leland looked up and said, "What is it?" After I explained it to him he got a smug look on his face like he always does when he is extremely annoyed at something. He then said, "I don't believe it." I said, "That is okay, I was just wondering what you thought." He then said, "You better not put that in any publications!" And I said, "Of course not." And I was about to leave when he said, "That is when John went off the deep end. He wanted his wife to have everything the men had and I wouldn't stand for it!" I then said, "Well you do believe women can have Priesthood after they are anointed, right?" He then smiled and said, "They have Priesthood, but not like that. They can't hold Church callings, except for in the Relief Society." I then said, "Really, Why not?" Leland just gave me a look that indicated that the conversation was over and said, "Because that is the way it is." I left and continued my compilation of the Revelations in my office. During that time I had the following experience on January 18th 2010.

"Tonight I had a Revelation and a Visitation. I was sitting at my desk in Leland's family room recording revelations from John Bryant for the Book of Revelations, when suddenly I looked over and standing in the air was a man in white robes.

He shone brightly but I could perceive that he was just a Spirit. He immediately identified himself as a Just man Made Perfect, and that he was here to deliver his message. I welcomed him and stretched out my hand but he did not move, he only delivered his message.

He said, "Samuel dost thou feel that burning in thine heart and how thou can feel my presence even more than thy eyes can perceive me?" I said, "Yes, Sir." He then said, "You can communicate with the world of spirits according to thy will from this time henceforth for I shall enlighten thee with a key upon this matter.

For behold Heavenly Father only sends angels to the sons of men for those who have carnal minds, save for the performing of ordinances. And even if a man who seeth the Angel is not the one with the carnal mind, those to whom he delivers his message are.



For behold, can the Lord not simply give a revelation upon the matter, and ye know well it is just as real and indeed it is from the Lord? It is because those to whom you deliver your message will not believe when you said I heard it, even from the mouth of the Lord.

They will think you imagined it or that ye are hearing things. Therefore the Lord sendeth thee an Angel from time to time in these circumstances, and ye have seen that even when ye look a man or a woman in the eyes and testify that you have shaken the hand of an Angel and they were just as real as they were, yet they still believe thee not.

Thinking thou art delusional, wherefore they believe not the keys set forth in the Doctrine and Covenants, but believeth Joseph Smith to be a liar in their hearts. These are they who cannot be helped, for they are willfully blind and must go into the eternal world so.

But ye know that the Light of Christ that is in thee is indeed so real and palpable and the voice of God that moveth through thy whole being is indeed more real and amazing than any visitation by a physical man in thy room.

Thou knowest that when thy whole soul is enlightened by the moving of great winds even the voice of thy Lord, the message is much clearer than trying to memorize what a messenger just said unto thee.

Wherefore rejoice my fellow servant that ye have these priceless gifts and always treasure them up unto eternal life. For it is a shame that most men and women because of their unbelief shall never enjoy these things.

Those who reject thy testimony shall regret it when they find their mistake in the world to come. Wherefore the reason this is so, is because thou art a spiritual being and ye are of thy Father who brought thee forth.

Rejoice forever in this knowledge and strive all thy days to share it with those elect few who will listen unto thee. I take my leave, and I report that thy Father loveth thee and will lead thee. Amen.

Here is also an account of when I got the Keys of Urim and Thummim and gained access to the Golden Plates in the hill Cummorah.

In the early spring of 2010 I was in my office in the loft of Leland's house when I fell asleep and was visited by an Angel who introduced himself as Nephi (The Nephi in Third Nephi). I was excited to meet him and he told me that he was sent to teach me the mysteries of the Urim and Thummim because I would shortly need them. He then took my hand and brought me to the Heavenly Temple on the City of Enoch. There he showed me a Urim and Thummim and

explained all the mysteries pertaining to them. He also taught me to use them, even when I did not physically have them. That is that he showed me some hands signs and mysteries whereby I could use the power of the Urim and Thummim even though they might not physically be with me. So he then took me back and showed me a vision of the room of records in the hill Cumorah. He showed me how I could view the plates using the Keys of the Urim and Thummim which he had previously taught me. It was actually very cool, I didn't even have to flip the leafs, I could just look through it to any plate I wanted to see. Nephi then said to me that I was not to Translate them until I was told to; he also told me not to tell anyone what I was about to Translate and I promised him that I would keep it a secret; although he did tell me that I could use the Keys of the Urim and Thummim whenever I wanted to in righteousness. It was almost a whole year later before he came back to me in a dream and told me to begin Translating the 116 lost pages up to the Book of First Nephi. So I did the whole thing in only a few months, and I also got the strong impression to publish it.

Samuel Warren Shaffer

Leland became more and more irritable about money and that I wasn't making enough of it, even though I gave him everything I made and paid all his electric bills. We also brought in almost all of the food through dumpster diving for cans. So we got out of there and went to Idaho Falls where I met and started teaching Jared Jones. During this time I got the revelation to start spreading the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood.

## Chapter 21

### Self-Restoration

#### Visit of Brother Joseph the Prophet

I was lying in a hammock in my parent's back yard on Tuesday the 10th of August 2010. I had just gotten off the phone with a friend, and I was just lying there thinking about the Gospel and looking at the stars. Suddenly I sat up in extreme solemnity. Standing there was a tall handsome man I had never met before, but the feeling coursing through me was a familiar one. I felt in that moment kind of the same way I did at Adam-Ondi-Ahman, or I did when I held Joseph Smith's sword, only many times more powerful. He smiled at me with a big beaming smile. He had golden hair that was somewhere in-between light brown and blonde, that I

would say was almost curly. He had bright eyes, and he had a good looking strait nose and must have been six feet tall at least. I wouldn't exactly call him portly but he was big and strong and a little more ruff around the edges than I expected. He wore two rings that had Egyptian characteristics which I am not permitted to explain at this time and he shook my hand with a firm grip. He asked if I knew who he was, and I said that I thought I had a good idea who he was, and he then introduced himself as Brother Joseph the Prophet. All my dreams and feelings about this moment had been realized, I was in the presence of the Prophet Joseph Smith Jr., the One Mighty and Strong, and the founder of this Dispensation.

I tested him with all I had and he passed. He then embraced me and we had a wonderful conversation. He told me that he had been very mindful of me and of my work, and that he was pleased in my desire to learn and get to the bottom of all that had transpired.

Joseph Smith told me. "I am calling you to assist me in the work of setting everything in Order. I have called many to this position but most of them have just made their own groups and claimed all of the Keys. They all say they are the one man, but I need you to tell them that I am the One man with all of the Keys of this Dispensation and with the calling to sit in council and to set everything in Order. They say they are the only ones in Order and that I cannot set any others in Order beside them. Do they think that they are my Priesthood leaders? If I have set others in Order beside them who are they indeed to oppose me?"

I asked Joseph what he meant by this and inquired as to who was in Order. Joseph told me that he had called a number of people including John Bryant and Gerald Peterson Sr. etc., but said that he was disappointed in most of them for taking honor unto themselves. He went on and said, Gerald Peterson Sr. atoned for his sins and I have taken him unto myself like I did with Rulon, but I am even more displeased with his son, whom I instructed to be called as President, for he has not allowed a man to take a wife unto himself in righteousness which women had promised to no other man.

Joseph Smith went on that the great sins of the Branch is that they say they are the only ones, and that they control the women and make them marry who they want through the withholding of permission to marry whom they will. Joseph then said, let us council together, and we talked for a few minutes about how they could be called unto repentance. Joseph Smith also said that in response to this problem that they have also adopted many false and vain Jewish traditions.

Joseph Smith also told me about Leland F. Freeborn. He said that he had many traditions and that he would not believe his (Joseph's) council. Joseph Smith also said that Leland had come under condemnation regarding the Orderville incident, and that he needed to repent. To see what happened in Orderville read Chapter Seven of My History and Testimony.

Joseph Smith explained, I hold all of the Keys to this Dispensation and I will call whoever I will. He also instructed me to tell the groups that with which judgment they judge they will also be judged. Joseph Smith also said, that one of the most wicked things a man can do is to control the marriage question. Joseph Smith and I then had a discussion on marriage and the rights of the women in it, and how it all worked etc. He related that the reason Martin Harris felt unworthy when they were praying to see the plates, was because he had entered into a Plural Marriage relationship and that he was having second thoughts. Joseph also related that it was due to Martin Harris' confusion on this point that made him make some of the concerning statements about himself committing Adultery.

He said that if a woman gives herself unto a man of the same race, and the man receives her in righteousness, and that woman has promised to no other man, they cannot sin in the union. A Sealer should feel good about it before sealing them and should interview them and verify they are worthy and that it is what the woman wants. However whether they get married or not is not the Sealers business, and if he tries to control them to get his own ends in this thing he has committed unrighteous dominion and must be destroyed.

We talked about how the Branch requires you to talk to your Priesthood leader up their little chain of command when you want to get married and I could tell at this point that Joseph had a righteous indignation about this. Joseph said that this was an abomination, and that it was done only to steal and control the women. He said that it wasn't the Priesthood leader's business whatsoever. Joseph went on and said it was wicked for them to attempt to control who marries who and that this was a sure sign of corruption and that those who are guilty must be punished for taking advantage of the pure daughters of God. He also related to me that this was the same sin the Nephites were responsible for when the privilege of eternal marriage was taken from them, recorded in Jacob chapter two.

Joseph told me that he would visit me again soon, and that he would instruct me from time to time to help me fulfill my mission to assist him in doing this great work. I know Joseph Smith lives, that he has a physical resurrected body. And that he still cares about what he started, and that he is still mindful of us in this work. This visit lasted for what I thought was a little over a half an hour.

I visited Leland again for Tabernacles that year and told him about this visitation. He was excited at first and even called me his right hand man and put me next to him at the Tabernacles table. This only lasted for about a day though as I began to tell him what Joseph Smith said about women's rights. He told me to repent for lying to him and I told him that I could not deny it. When I left, that was the last time I ever saw him.

It was right after this that I got a revelation from the Gods to teach the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood to people so that they could restore the Priesthood to their own

family lines, and that one could restore all the ordinances for themselves; and that this was to be called self-restoration. At that time I wrote these articles.

Free-agency and Spiritual Anarchy  
by Samuel Warren Shaffer

Many people think of political anarchy without ever applying it to every aspect of their lives. When groups of people get together where free thought is exercised and expressed, the first thing most people notice is that everyone has different ideas and beliefs about almost everything. Many ask is this healthy or should free thought be regulated? Religious leaders are often paranoid about this phenomenon; so much so in fact that you can be excommunicated from the LDS Church on the spot for believing certain unorthodox things taught by previous Prophets but not for most serious sins. Church leaders want everyone to chant the party line and if you think anything else there are severe consequences. Everyone sees the world in different ways and therefore their inherent beliefs will differ, even if they choose to explain them according to a template called a religion. So if it is so natural, why fear it? This is why Joseph Smith said, "I never hear of a man being damned for believing too much; but they are damned for unbelief." 1. Unbelief here, in my opinion, meaning willfully ignorant and or not giving things the benefit of the doubt.

We are all familiar with the quote of Joseph Smith saying, "I teach them correct principles and let them govern themselves." 2. But few dare apply this to every aspect of their lives. Most see it merely as a social statement and not even a political one. What would happen if we applied it to every aspect of our lives including spirituality? Moses wished that "all the Lord's people were Prophets." 3. This is hard to understand for many people in our modern Mormon society who think of "The Prophet" as one man in some succession; but in fact everyone being Prophets is exactly what Joseph Smith wanted as all great minds think alike. It was to be called the Patriarchal form of government where every Patriarch would rule over his own family by moral authority. To gain revelation in behalf of any individual requires moral authority, and actually having moral authority and simply trying to claim it by virtue of a Church calling are two different things.

On September 22nd 1832, Joseph Smith met with the brethren in Kirtland and revealed unto them the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood including the first half of Section 84 of the Doctrine and Covenants. Contrary to what we were all told growing up in the Church the "Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood" is not all contained in Section eighty four. There was an actual covenant that was never publically revealed. One of the reasons for this is that Brigham Young opposed Joseph Smith on the issue of how things should be administered. Brigham Young was 180 degrees from Joseph in his political opinions. Brigham Young believed that every aspect of

people's lives needed to be regulated and that people needed to be dependent on their Priesthood leaders and not on themselves. Instead of being published the actual wording of the Oath and Covenant was passed down through the hierarchies of the LDS movement until it came to me.

I was called in one day by my Priesthood leader who was an Apostle and received the Oath and Covenant of the Melchizedek Priesthood as it had been passed down from Joseph Smith himself. I immediately began to feel the Priesthood distilling upon my head as it were from heaven itself and I have often had that experience since that time. I learned that I had received the Melchizedek Priesthood for Eternity and that it would continue to distill upon me as I fulfilled my Covenants. I also learned that conferred Priesthood is temporal, or in other words unless someone receives the Oath and Covenant sooner or later they will not enjoy the Priesthood in the Eternities to come. It says in Hebrews "(For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath by him that said unto him, The Lord swore and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:)" and continuing in verse 23, "And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death:" 4.

I have continued getting Revelations even from before that time, and one of the things that God has always revealed to me on deeper and deeper levels is the principle of free agency. That is what proved us before we were born and I believe that free agency is ultimately what will prove us here. One day I got a Revelation that blew me away; it is what I have come to call the principle of self-restoration. I was told that the time had come to reveal the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood openly and that this would start a movement where people could be spiritually independent. I also realized that self-restoration was the real answer to the problem the Church faced in 1978. The Church leaders knew about the Oath and Covenant in 1978 but they also realized if revealed it would decentralize their power. Through the principle of self-restoration people could take the Oath and Covenant if they felt worthy to do so upon their own responsibility. If someone of another family tree desired the Priesthood they could self administer the Oath and Covenant upon themselves, and if they got the Priesthood or not would be between them and God. Under this system everyone would only administer ordinances to their own family, and friends if they agreed. Instead of doing this the Church essentially stated that God just changed his mind as they have so conveniently said so many times before, instead of taking the solution that Joseph Smith gave to them in Kirtland.

This idea of spiritual independence is so alien to most people who grew up in a Church which taught them to do what their priesthood leaders told them even if they knew it was wrong, that they have a hard time grasping such an idea. 5. Joseph Smith said, "We have heard men who hold the priesthood remark that they would do anything they were told to do by

those who preside over them even if they knew it was wrong; but such obedience is worse than folly to us; it is slavery in the extreme; and the man who would thus willingly degrade himself, should not claim a rank among intelligent beings, until he turns from his folly. A man of God would despise the idea." 6. My closest friends and family have told me that I am on "dangerous, uncharted and experimental ground." But so is gaining your Exaltation in flaming glory for someone to whom it has not been revealed. The real issue is that they are scared that power would be decentralized. They feel that people need to be regulated and that there needs to be truth withheld from people, because they think they can't handle it. If Joseph Smith's statement about letting people "govern themselves" was applied to every aspect of life there would be more than just Anarchy for a Political System but there would also be spiritual Anarchy.

When most people think of the word anarchy, they conjure up images of violence in their mind not realizing that Jainism the most peaceful religion on earth is a system of Anarchy. That is they respect everyone's opinion and will let you believe whatever you want; they will even consider you a member of their religion as long as you follow the basic foundational principles they teach. Many people say that the first law of heaven is obedience, but forget to mention that, that is the case because the Angels do whatever they are told; but that does not apply to the Gods. The Gods live in a Divine Anarchy which is governed by love alone.

Many people have also asked me if these things are taught in the scriptures. Jesus said, "the Kingdom of God is within you." 7. Implying in my mind, that the power of the Priesthood was already dormant inside them and they just had to unlock it through making and living Covenants with their Heavenly Parents. He also said, "Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?" 8. Meaning in my opinion that we are Gods in embryo and that we potentially already have authority of which we know not, either through bloodline or from our pre-earth life. Jesus also said that it is life eternal to know him and his Father who sent him. 9. So it is clear to me that the concept of centralized Church government was not part of Jesus Christ's message.

There are also many references to concepts of self-restoration in the Book of Mormon and other standard works. Alma the elder for instance left King Noah who was the leader of the Church and started his own church in the wilderness. It says in Mosiah, "And now it came to pass that Alma took Helam, he being one of the first, and went and stood forth in the water, and cried, saying: O Lord, pour out thy Spirit upon thy servant, that he may do this work with holiness of heart. And when he had said these words, the Spirit of the Lord was upon him, and he said: Helam, I baptize thee, having authority from the Almighty God, as a testimony that ye have entered into a covenant to serve him until you are dead as to the mortal body; and may the Spirit of the Lord be poured out upon you; and may he grant unto you eternal life, through the redemption of Christ, whom he has prepared from the foundation of the world. And after

Alma had said these words, both Alma and Helam were buried in the water; and they arose and came forth out of the water rejoicing, being filled with the Spirit. And again, Alma took another, and went forth a second time into the water, and baptized him according to the first, only he did not bury himself again in the water." And starting in verse seventeen it says, "And they were called the church of God, or the church of Christ, from that time forward. And it came to pass that whosoever was baptized by the power and authority of God was added to his church. And it came to pass that Alma, having authority from God, ordained priests; even one priest to every fifty of their number did he ordain to preach unto them, and to teach them concerning the things pertaining to the kingdom of God." 10.

The reference to Alma baptizing himself along with Helam, having received the Priesthood from God, is very interesting indeed and I will show that, that it is not the only time such an idea comes up in the scriptures. It says in the Book of Moses, "And it came to pass, when the Lord had spoken with Adam our father, that Adam cried unto the Lord, and he was caught away by the Spirit of the Lord and was carried down into the water, and was laid under the water, and was brought forth out of the water. And thus he was baptized, and the Spirit of God descended upon him, and thus he was born of the Spirit, and became quickened in the inner man." 11. There are also references to people being inspired to give an ordinance and having it given back to themselves. It says in the Joseph Smith History, "Accordingly we went and were baptized. I baptized him first, and afterwards he baptized me-after which I laid my hands upon his head and ordained him to the Aaronic Priesthood, and afterwards he laid his hands on me and ordained me to the same Priesthood-for so we were commanded." 12.

There are many places in the scriptures where it talks about self administered ordinances. Alma said to his son Corianton, "Now my son, I would that ye should repent and forsake your sins, and go no more after the lusts of your eyes, but cross yourself in all these things; for except ye do this ye can in nowise inherit the kingdom of God. Oh, remember, and take it upon you, and cross yourself in these things." 13. When Alma says "cross yourself" he is talking about a self administered Covenant similar to those made in Temples before 1990; so essentially what Alma is telling his son to do, is to endow himself with certain covenants so that he can "inherit the kingdom of God." In a revelation to Wilford Woodruff the Lord said, "Therefore, as I have said in a former commandment, so I the LORD say unto Mine apostles: Go ye alone by yourselves, whether in heat or in cold, and cleanse your feet with water, pure water, it matters not whether it be by the running streams or in your closets, but leave these testimonies before the LORD and the heavenly hosts;" 14. Here the Lord has asked Wilford to perform his own washing of feet Ordinance, and the list of references goes on. Some might even be shocked to find out that this is how Brigham received his Second Anointing; he anointed Heber C. Kimball and Heber anointed him. 15.



The leadership of the Church would have you believe that they are the only ones who are allowed to do this sort of thing, or that the Lord made an exception but doesn't use the same principles to establish a system where no one has to rely on another's free agency to gain salvation. Joseph Smith said, "But I say, in the name of the Lord, that the kingdom of God was set up on the earth from the days of Adam to the present time, whenever there has been a righteous man on earth unto whom God revealed His word and gave power and authority to administer in His name. And where there is a priest of God--a minister who has power and authority from God to administer in the ordinances of the gospel and officiate in the priesthood of God--there is the kingdom of God." 16.

Someone asked me why Joseph Smith got the Aaronic Priesthood first if he could have just received this Oath and Covenant of the Melchizedek Priesthood, and I will answer that. The reason Joseph Smith got the Aaronic Priesthood first is because he was already seeing Angels on a regular basis and it was a simple thing to do it that way. On the other hand God has provided a way for people who do not have, or have not developed the gift of seeing Angels yet but who are worthy individuals. Also most people who get exposed to this will have been prepared through being members of Mormon groups including the LDS Church already. If someone comes at it from a totally outside position then they will have to be worthy and ready for the responsibility of the Melchizedek Priesthood right off the bat; that is rare but not impossible. Also remember that you can formulate your own opinions and beliefs regarding all of this through study and prayer to your Heavenly Parents. I don't think everyone has to believe exactly the same things about everything.

With all of that said I will reveal the words of the Oath and Covenant of the Melchizedek Priesthood with a warning that if you decide to take this Oath upon yourself to always honor and respect it. It says in the Doctrine and Covenants, "And also all they who receive this priesthood receive me, saith the Lord. For he that receiveth my servants receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth my Father; and he that receiveth my Father receiveth my Father's kingdom; therefore all that my Father hath shall be given unto him. And this is according to the oath and covenant which belongeth to the priesthood. Therefore all those who receive the priesthood, receive this oath and covenant of my Father, which he cannot break, neither can it be moved. But whoso breaketh this covenant after he hath received it, and altogether turneth therefrom, shall not have forgiveness of sins in this world nor in the world to come. And wo unto all those who come not unto this priesthood which ye have received, which I now confirm upon you who are present this day, by mine own voice out of the heavens; and even I have given the heavenly hosts and mine angels charge concerning you." 17. It is interesting to note that in this Revelation God says he confirms the Priesthood upon them by his own voice "out of the heavens;" not by the laying on of hands. After you have taken the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood upon yourself you will probably receive a Revelation in the future where God

accepts your taking of the Oath and Covenant, confirms it upon you and seals you up unto Eternal life which may come before or after you receive your Second Anointing; which Revelation is often called your calling and election.

When you take this Oath upon yourself, you should raise your arms to the square and say the words of the Covenant which are, "My father I pledge my Oath, „Thy Kingdom Come here on earth. Thy will be done here as it is in heaven." I covenant with thee, that I will learn and obey thy commandments. As I learn each new principle in the gospel, I will strive to be obedient to those principles so that I will be worthy of receiving the blessings of that law. For I will obey thee oh Lord; and take thee as my Law. I do know that ye shall not fail; and that the realization and receipt of those blessings will depend upon my faithfulness. I understand that my faith depends upon my obedience to all thy Revelations and that if I break thy words and transgress thy commands that I will not, and cannot, receive the good that obeying thee provides. I understand ye cannot fail. I understand that ye are God because ye cannot fail. And that your laws and commandments are to bring myself into understanding eternal principles that thou and others in heaven obey. That if I am to become one with thee that I must learn and adhere to eternal laws and become like thee. That ye will not change for me; or then that ye would cease to be God. Amen.

Signed this day \_\_\_\_\_

By myself \_\_\_\_\_

Witness \_\_\_\_\_

Date \_\_\_\_\_

Location \_\_\_\_\_

The proclaiming of the Oath and Covenant would totally decentralize the corrupt powers that have controlled the Churches for this past eon and truly give mankind spiritual freedom from tyranny. I believe this was one of the most important aspects of the Restoration and it has totally been swept under the rug of history. Joseph Smith's whole campaign for the presidency of the United States hinged on personal accountability and free agency. He believed that behavior could be changed by teaching correct doctrines and by changing environments that generate crime. Joseph Smith was way before his time, a true Anarchist according to modern definition.

People can think for themselves and they can be responsible. However the moment anyone tries to push forward the Restoration even a little bit and reveal something that has not

been revealed before, even if it had been revealed before but kept shrouded in secrecy; they are met with complete opposition. I joyfully proclaim that the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood is one of those well guarded secrets, one that they do not want exposed. But unfortunately for them it says that in the last days all their secrets would be shouted from the roof tops! 18. I know it works and I know this is what Joseph Smith intended because he told me. To learn more please visit my websites at [counciloftheseers.webs.com](http://counciloftheseers.webs.com) and [templeofodin.webs.com](http://templeofodin.webs.com). It has been revealed to me that Free-agency and Love are the most important principles in all eternity.

Sig. Samuel Warren Shaffer

1. Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, Section Six 1843-44, p.373.
2. Millennial Star 13:22 page 339.
3. Numbers 11:29.
4. Hebrews 7:21 & 23.
5. Conference Report, October 1960, p. 78.
6. Millennial Star Vol. 14, pg. 593.
7. Luke 17:21.
8. John 10:34.
9. John 17:3.
10. Mosiah 18:12-15 & 17-18.
11. Moses 6:64-65.
12. JSH 71.
13. Alma 39:9.
14. Revelation to Wilford Woodruff, January 26th 1880, in Sunset Arizona.
15. Book of Anointings, pg 2. Historian's Office Library, January 8th - February 7th, 1846. Book end title "W. Richards" in gold leaf, C.H.D., CR/342/3/box 4.
16. Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, Section Five 1842-43, pg. 271.
17. D&C 84:35-42.
18. Mormon 5:8.

## One Man or Many?

By Samuel Warren Shaffer

When one is confronted by members of the Brighamite branch of Mormonism they are taught that only one man at a time holds the Sealing Power, or in other words the power to marry couples for all eternity. Their reasoning is a single scripture found in D&C 132:7. It reads as follows: "And verily I say unto you, that the conditions of this law are these: All covenants,

contracts, bonds, obligations, oaths, vows, performances, connections, associations, or expectations, that are not made and entered into and sealed by the Holy Spirit of promise, of him who is anointed, both as well for time and for all eternity, and that too most holy, by revelation and commandment through the medium of mine anointed, whom I have appointed on the earth to hold this power (and I have appointed unto my servant Joseph to hold this power in the last days, and there is never but one on the earth at a time on whom this power and the keys of this priesthood are conferred), are of no efficacy, virtue, or force in and after the resurrection from the dead; for all contracts that are not made unto this end have an end when men are dead.”

This doesn't appear to be the case in previous dispensations with all the prophets, but one is even more confused when he finds out that this revelation was first made public in 1852, when Orson Pratt declared Polygamy a doctrine of the Church; and that no eastern Churches have any copy of this revelation in any of their records. A much shorter revelation on Plural Marriage was reported to have been burned by Emma and this copy only surfaced when Bishop Whitaker conveniently had a copy along with many other forged historical documents. Whether this document is legitimate or not must stand the test of previously revealed scripture, as no one besides confidants of Brigham ever remember Joseph revealing any such doctrine. Let us begin our examination.

Matthew 18:18 records a promise from Jesus to his disciples/apostles, it says. “Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.” This is confusing in light of D&C 132, as it appears that Jesus is talking to more than one of his disciples. When holding to the Brighamite view one is confronted with the conflict of marriages between the Book of Mormon and the Bible. First of all, who took the sealing power with them, Lehi or Jeremiah; or Amoz or someone else? We are made to believe that all the prophets had the ordinances of salvation and with inadequate communication technology we are left wondering who the one man is.

The confusion thickens when we realize that Jesus Christ said to the Nephi in the book of Helaman: “Behold, I give unto you power, that whatsoever ye shall seal on earth shall be sealed in heaven; and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven; and thus shall ye have power among this people.” (Helaman 10:7) This is said around the same time that Jesus is promising the sealing power to his disciples. Since we now realize there is a discrepancy, let us examine the revelations of Joseph Smith which are well documented and accepted by everyone for answers. D&C 128:8-9 says:

“Now, the nature of this ordinance consists in the power of the priesthood, by the revelation of Jesus Christ, wherein it is granted that whatsoever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Or, in other words, taking a

different view of the translation, whatsoever you record on earth shall be recorded in heaven, and whatsoever you do not record on earth shall not be recorded in heaven; for out of the books shall your dead be judged, according to their own works, whether they themselves have attended to the ordinances in their own propria persona, or by the means of their own agents, according to the ordinance which God has prepared for their salvation from before the foundation of the world, according to the records which they have kept concerning their dead.

“It may seem to some to be a very bold doctrine that we talk of—a power which records or binds on earth and binds in heaven. Nevertheless, in all ages of the world, whenever the Lord has given a dispensation of the priesthood to any man by actual revelation, or any set of men, this power has always been given. Hence, whatsoever those men did in authority, in the name of the Lord, and did it truly and faithfully, and kept a proper and faithful record of the same, it became a law on earth and in heaven, and could not be annulled, according to the decrees of the great Jehovah. This is a faithful saying. Who can hear it?” (D&C 128:8-9)

This totally flies in the face of Brigham’s version of Joseph’s revelation on Plural Marriage. Note that it says, “Or any set of men,” – does that sound like one man? This is supported by the fact that during anointings in the Kirtland Temple and also second anointings performed in Nauvoo that having the power sealed upon you to bind on earth and have it bound in heaven was part of the ordinance. For a reference to this one can look up Brigham’s own anointing by Heber C. Kimball which states, “and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven, and whomsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven;”. As also Heber C. Kimball’s anointing which says; “I seal upon you power to bind on Earth & it Shall be bound in Heaven & whomsoever thou Shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven,”... (Taken from the Nauvoo Temple "Book of Anointings"; Historian's Office Library; January 8 - February 7, 1846; Book end title: "W. Richards" in gold leaf; C.H.D., CR/342/3/box 4.)

I myself upheld for a long while that one needed a second anointing to have this power however D&C 128:8 says; “by the revelation of Jesus Christ, wherein it is granted that whatsoever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.” The revelation here spoken of is clearly not how you dictate individual marriages but how you receive the power as did Nephi, this is further illustrated in verse 9, where it says, “whenever the Lord has given a dispensation of the priesthood to any man by actual revelation, or any set of men, this power has always been given.” This means that any Elder of Zion can receive it, and this is further illustrated in D&C 128:14 which says; “Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as are the records on the earth in relation to your dead, which are truly

made out, so also are the records in heaven. This, therefore, is the sealing and binding power, and, in one sense of the word, the keys of the kingdom, which consist in the key of knowledge.”

It also says in D&C 127:6-7, “Verily, thus saith the Lord unto you concerning your dead: When any of you are baptized for your dead, let there be a recorder, and let him be eye-witness of your baptisms; let him hear with his ears, that he may testify of a truth, saith the Lord;

“That in all your recordings it may be recorded in heaven; whatsoever you bind on earth, may be bound in heaven; whatsoever you loose on earth, may be loosed in heaven;”

It is also interesting to note that the one man doctrine in D&C 132:7 is in parenthesis, which indicates that it was very possibly added; and this in contrast with D&C 128:9 which clearly states “to any man by actual revelation, or set of men,” and is not in parenthesis. I am even ashamed that coming out of Brighamism I never noticed these scriptures, although it is humbling to know we all have scriptures we overlook. These scriptures totally disempower Brigham Young’s “one man doctrine” and completely empower the Eastern Church’s to finally perform temple ordinances. Let us throw off the tyranny of the leaders of the saints in the desert and blow wind into the sails of those who remain in Zion. This is the gathering which hath been spoken about, to realize the saints are empowered and finally able to build Zion.

It is a riddle to wonder why Joseph Smith wrote the letter of appointment to James J. Strang which was verified by Lucy Mack Smith, William Smith and his three sisters as well as having set apart Joseph Smith III to the presidency, telling Cutler to look for a certain sign to start the Church, and setting Lyman Wight and Brigham on their own courses if not to preserve a piece of the truth with each of them. We now see that it was probably in order to get them or us in future generations to decode the truth and unite in peace and love, for this is the only way we will ever build Zion. If we are not one, we as a group shall not be his. Not everyone we fellowship with needs to believe all the exact same things, people have their freedom and right to believe slightly different things. A man is not a bad man for what he believes but for what he does only. Let us take after the example of Joseph Smith who united a people and taught them about free agency, and we can be one. We can ordain each other and allow each to live their religion with their family Kingdoms in various expressions and still love one another. Let us be saints, or let us fail!

In the Mouth of Two or Three Witnesses  
by Samuel Warren Shaffer

This article is devoted to the concept that the Gods reveal things in the mouth of two or three witnesses; and it is about a specific doctrine which has been revealed three different times, to three different people in different times and places, which had no correspondence.

The three revealers of this truth don't agree on everything, but it is not the disagreements which are significant; it is instead the evidence that God has revealed the same thing on three different occasions because of its importance to mankind. The doctrine we shall here cover is that there is a Holy Order among the Gods, that they lived in harmony in the Garden of Eden, that their council consists of a 144,000 deities; and that they have Holy Children which come to the earth to teach salvation unto the children of men from time to time. It was first revealed to a Prophet named Joseph Morris in the winter of 1859, and below is a selection of quotes from that Revelation.

### **Joseph Morris**

Selections of Revelations from Joseph Morris on the subject

"1. Who are they? They are the firstborn sons of one hundred and forty-four thousand Gods, all in advance of Jesus Christ. John said that they were the first-fruits unto God. Unto what God? Unto each of their own Fathers. How did they become the first-fruits unto the Lamb also? In that they were appointed by his Father to assist him in bringing to pass the salvation and exaltation of Adam's posterity, and, consequently, they received his mark in their foreheads as a token of the appointment that they had received from him. Why did they come forth upon this earth to assist Jesus in bringing to pass the salvation and exaltation of Adam's posterity? In order that they might continue to pass on from one stage of progression to another, and, ultimately, become Gods like unto the Eternal Father."

It then speaks of their Holy Children starting in verse eleven.

"11. What are those one hundred and forty-four thousand spoken of by John the Revelator? They are all high priests after the order of Melchisedec all having obtained a resurrected body. Why were they called to officiate in the lesser offices of the priesthood? Because it was not known who they were while the Church was under an imperfect organization; hence, they officiated in all the lesser offices of the Church for the work of the ministry.

12. The holy priesthood runs by birthright, and the firstborn son always holds the keys of that priesthood. Has the firstborn son the privilege of becoming a God? Yes. Have any others the same privilege? Yes. When the firstborn son steps out of his place to become a God, the next to him steps into that place, and holds the keys of the holy priesthood ; and so their order continues from one to another until they all hold the keys of the priesthood.

13. When did Jesus Christ receive his first ordination to the office of a high priest? Soon after he and his brethren had received their resurrected bodies. His own Father ordained them to that authority; and, holding the holy priesthood, they were appointed to fill the office of Holy

Ghosts or ministering angels to those of this earth who are heirs of salvation being filled with eternal light.

He continues in verse twenty three.

“23. According to the eternal law, one hundred and forty-four thousand Gods form a quorum. The first God of a quorum, assisted by the next two below him, who are his counselors, rule all the rest of the quorum, and he is subject to the God immediately preceding him, and so on, even up to the first God of all who rules and presides over all the quorums of the Gods.”

(The Spirit Prevails, Winter of 1859)

In another revelation in 1860 this verse was revealed.

“12. O ye hundred and forty-four thousand! You also have power to lay down your lives and to take them up again; for you received this commandment from your Fathers. And you, in connection with Adam, hold the keys of the resurrection pertaining to his posterity.”

(The Spirit Prevails, October 2nd 1860)

### **John Bryant**

The next Prophet to have this doctrine revealed to him was named John Bryant. John Bryant clearly had no connection with Morris from the simple fact that John Bryant out of default of his circumstances felt Brigham Young was the Prophet. Brigham Young was on the other side of a bloody massacre against Joseph Morris, and was instrumental in his death. Joseph Morris' revelations have also been out of print, and I have not been under the impression that John Bryant was even aware of the Morrisite Massacre, let alone of this revelation by him. The first Revelation listed below to John Bryant is called Levels of Light.

A Selection from Levels of Light, Revealed to John Bryant

79 Now this should be the desire of all men, to become like God and become endowed with power from on high, that they can do the things that God does.

80 Oh, how saddened I am that only a small few find this path, although all have an opportunity to cross it.

81 Now if a person will learn those characteristics which are in Mormon's book and which have been laid down by all the holy prophets since the world began, that person can obtain a joint heirship with the Son, even Jesus Christ, and will have all that He has.



82 In this state he can do all that Jesus can do, for he will be like Him in all ways.

83 Because of this bonding with the Lord, the individual will go and do those things that the Son does and will participate with Him in the creation of new worlds.

84 And these individuals will be the Gods of the worlds they create or the Fathers of those new earths.

85 And thus is the prophecy fulfilled which saith, "Whether there be one God or many Gods, they shall be manifest."

86 For have you not now had revealed unto you that there are many Fathers?

87 And in fact, these Fathers constitute a quorum which is in members 144,000.

88 And, God the Father, or Jesus' Father is the spokesman for this group. These individuals working as a united effort are seeking to turn the hearts of their children to the Fathers and have plainly manifested that the hearts of the Fathers are already turned to the children.

89 Oh, man, has He not promised that to him that seeketh, findeth and to those that ask, He will give liberally and upbraid not.

90 Each Father desires to have his spiritual offspring find the path that will lead them to His presence. Not in the spirit or as a spirit, but in the flesh; perfecting the spiritual by overcoming the flesh until the flesh cannot be withheld from the presence of the Father.

91 And what must a person let go of to overcome the flesh and be taken through the veil into the presence of the Holy Ones?

92 He must loose himself of all earthly things and rely on God for all his sustenance, living his life by every word that procedeth forth from the mouth of God. Taking no thought for the morrow but letting the morrow take care of itself. Putting not his trust in man but putting his trust in God, knowing that God will only lay before him that which would be for his best good.

93 A person must learn to bring himself above the judging of others. For such who judge only seek to justify their own position and by so doing, what are they expressing to God about how he is dealing with them?

94 Each person has to learn to let others travel their own path, for God knows what is best for each soul and what life experiences he or she may need in order to progress in the best manner.

(Levels of Light, revealed to John Bryant)

John Bryant also had an experience where he was taken up to Zion or the city of Enoch; this is part of what he said about that experience.

“In the City of Enoch, as that holy place is also called, they explained to me that it is impossible to understand its beginning. Good and evil have always existed, as have sentient beings who follow either good or evil. In the beginning, this earth was settled by a colony of men and women who had learned the secrets of eternal life. They were the embodiment of Good, filled with Light, troubled by neither sorrow nor death. We read in our Bibles about Adam and Eve, but these are prototypes for this colony of divine men and women who stood on the earth in the beginning of time and pronounced it a good place to settle. They established among their children a society based upon the principles of righteousness whereby they had perfected their divine natures. The evil ones soon came among them, however, seeking to lead their posterity away from the ways of Good and many did follow after them. The Ancients remained, however, for nearly 1000 years until they had a body of their decedents firmly established in the way of life which they taught. Although the Ancient ones departed from the earth they have watched over it to this day, intervening in the course of history from time to time but generally allowing mankind to learn the nature of good and evil for their own experiences. When they have found people receptive, they have sent messengers to teach the principles of eternal life and the nature of their society which provides for each individual, freedom from death, poverty, sickness and sorrow.” (From a pamphlet called the Spirit World Message, by John Bryant.)

John Bryant also wrote,

“When Adam and Eve were in the Garden of Eden, they were a colony of resurrected exalted beings. The Lord explained to Moses, “The first man of all men have I called Adam, WHICH IS MANY.” (Moses 1:34) As a colony (in number symbolized by 144,000) they functioned as one being known as Adam and Eve. The perfection of Christ’s love that was in them allowed them to function as one.” (The Holy Order of God, Voice of Zion Vol. VI No. 8)

### **Samuel Warren Shaffer**

Some might try to accuse me of getting this doctrine from these other Prophets, but nothing could be further from the truth. I had never heard of John Bryant until about half way through my time at Leland’s, only after I dug up some old materials from in his house. At that time I still didn’t know anything about Joseph Morris, and this was one of the very first doctrines ever revealed to me. My Brother Adam can testify to this as I told him about it only a week before I went down to visit Leland for the first time. At that time I was having a lot of spiritual upheaval because I had gotten a Revelation from an Angel in the Mt. Timpanogos Temple to live plural marriage; and I was praying about where to go. The only answer I got was

the revelation about the 144,000 Gods, which I can now see was my answer. To illustrate this point I have a document from this time period written just before finding Leland. I buried this revelation for a long time as I had asked Leland about reincarnation and he had shot me down on the subject. For a time I felt maybe it was a false spirit and just left it in a dark corner of my hard drive. At that time I was still shy about writing down thus saith the Lord revelations, and so I just wrote the thoughts that were revealed to me at that time. My comments from that time just before going to Leland's are as follows,

"You must experience everything under Heaven to be exalted. This is the reason for visions, but the day will come when you will need to earn your own Exaltation, and not have it just by proxy which means you will need to be the Savior on other worlds. Then you may create worlds and Father your children there. Being born again is a priesthood ordinance. In the beginning 144,000 Eloheim came to live in the Garden. Adam our Father was the first to partake of the fruit. All the other Adams in their turn ate of it, they lived lives as wise men on the earth and then died; they were then reborn as prophets through the ages. Joseph Smith was one of these. When you are resurrected you are not immediately immortal you must pass back through the gates into the Garden of Eden past the Cherubim who stand as Sentinels and partake of the tree of life which is in the paradise of God. Remember the argument on whether man can work up kingdoms of glory? The answer is yes, but they must do it through lives on other worlds. Let me explain, it says the Morning Star shouted together those stars were actually members of the Telestial Kingdom, who came to our earth. Can people move up Kingdoms? Yes, they can through lives on other planets. Remember when Lehi saw the Savior that was like the sun and the Apostles that were like the stars? (In chapter one of 1 Nephi) When Peter James and John came to Adam they came to him out of the Garden of Eden they had resurrected bodies from another world they ate of the fruit of this world, and died. The Garden of Eden is Literally Heaven on Earth until it was lifted up."

(Samuel Shaffer recorded in "My Case of Cases" December 2007.)

Since that time I have had a lot more revelations on the subject, very few of which I have actually shared publically, except for the general concept. There are a few things which are not quite clear enough in the quote above as I was looking through a glass darkly; and so I will clarify some of it now. I will explain it in three sections, Cycles of the Gods, Cycles of Angels and Sons and Daughters of the Gods.

The first is Cycles of the Gods: There was a council of the Gods of a 144,000 which came down to live in the Garden of Eden; and in many Gardens before that. Their course is in a round between the heavens and the earth. They come down to the Terrestrial Kingdom from the Celestial and make a Garden, and then they come down to the Telestial Kingdom from the Terrestrial and make a Garden; which we know as the Garden of Paradise or Eden on this earth.

They live their lives die and take up their lives again with the Keys of Resurrection; this is what is meant in the D&C concerning eternal lives. They may also reincarnate multiple times if they so choose. Adam and his fellow Gods went back up to the Terrestrial Kingdom to the City of Enoch and had a Garden there for a thousand years after leaving the earth. They then eventually retook their place in the New Jerusalem on the Celestial Worlds, which is like a giant crystal space ship (meaning it is mobile). That is the cycle or round of the Gods that they make until they progress on to even higher worlds.

The second is Cycles of the Angels: When the Gods are absent in the heavens the Angels rule in their place; and hence the rounds of the Gods give birth to the cycle of the Angels. Angels are unenlightened beings because as Joseph Smith said, they have put up too many stakes on God to become Gods. In other words they have traditions and egos which prevent them from attaining liberation. They have attained energetic resurrection by proxy only but not enlightenment. This makes it so that whenever the Gods are absent the Angels have wars and generally one Angel conquers his other rivals and sets himself up as the "One" orthodox God from which he distills dogmatic rules and traditions to the rest of them. When the Gods return to any world they generally have to clean house, which is the cause of all discontent in the heavens and the primary source of fallen Angels.

The third topic is the Sons and Daughters of the Gods: When the Gods gain physical bodies they are either male or female and are hence Gods or Goddesses; which state applies to the Terrestrial and Telestial Worlds. When they gain their Celestial resurrected or energetic body they generally transform into both male and female or are Hermaphrodites in other words. In this state they give birth to their first fruits, or the spirits of the Holy Children. Holy Children are those Sons and Daughters of God which will also be physically fathered by the Gods on earth. These Sons and Daughters of the Gods sometimes also have previous lives leading up to their missions, which is to teach the knowledge of salvation. Examples of such Holy Children are Krishna, the Buddhas, Jesus Christ and others who imparted the knowledge of salvation to the children of men. The two basic components of this teaching is,

1. Knowledge of the Atonement or how to overcome sin with love, and be reunited in the Holy Order of the Gods.
2. How to obtain energetic resurrection through enlightenment or individuation and how to gain immortality through the use of Titan Stones. (The white stone talked about in the Revelation of John.)

Concluding I will end with a beautiful quote from a scripture I translated called the Book of Joseph the Son of Lehi, which was in the end of the 116 lost pages.

“13. And now I Bothuel shall write my last admonition and testimony, wherefore oh mine children and also the children of Nephi, and of Zoram and of Sam, and of Jacob, hear my words and believe in the Gods who came down into the Garden of Eden, and be saved according to the mercy and power of their Sons, and through the knowledge of the Son of Michael whose name shall be Esus, and which hath been revealed unto Nephi all those years ago upon the mount to which the Spirit took him.

14. And behold whether you are taken in or out of the body to commune with the Gods it mattereth not, for we must come into the presence of the Gods, and come into communion with our Fathers insomuch that our hearts turn to them and their hearts turn to us. And behold when we are resurrected in glory we shall see the Gods in the flesh.”

(The Book of Joseph the Son of Lehi, Chapter 6)

### Ordinances in Self Restoration

Ordinances can be self-performed after one has taken the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood, or two people can perform ordinances for one another after receiving the Oath and Covenant. Here is a quote from an article called Making sense of my Writings and Ancient religion, in which the ordinances are reviewed.

Ordinances and their purpose – There are many ordinances which have both energetic and psychological purposes. I will briefly go through the major or most common ordinances and explain their functions.

1. Immersion for the reversal of the effects of the illusion of separateness. This ordinance is symbolic of the internal or mental ocean within us. Through this ordinance we are forgiven for past ignorance and encouraged to know ourselves more fully by immersing ourselves within the ocean of our minds. We also understand through it that we are in a feminine ocean which is the universe, and that there is a feminine aspect or universe within us.

2. Blessing for the Holy Spirits of the Just. This ordinance blesses one that their ancestors may be with them and help them realize the work of gathering their mental emanations. They also help bring revelation which is necessary to truly gain the fullness of the Priesthood, and find one’s energetic feminine selves.

3. Communion and ordinations to the Priesthood. Communion can be done with bread and wine or with fruit and ale, depending upon the symbolism being invoked. This is a sign of brotherhood, both with the living and those spirits of your ancestors which are with you; which

rekindles your relationship and allows them to purify you more fully. Ordinations are ordinances which pass borrowed Priesthood, for certain tasks or callings.

4. Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood of the Fathers and Mothers. There can be a generic version of this for the Gods or also one specifically revealed from one's own heavenly Parents. The generic one brings the Priesthood of the Son and the revealed one brings the fullness of the Priesthood of the Son; whereby washing of feet and second anointing ordinances may be performed. Most Oaths and Covenants include an Oath to uphold the deities' Kingdom with whom you are doing it with, as well as a Covenant to receive their revelations with an open heart.

5. Sealings. These are ordinances whereby two individuals who love each other are sealed or bound by cords of particles and energy for eternity, whereby they are given a promise that they will find each other again after death. These ordinances may be performed by sealers set apart by those holding the sealing power through a Second Anointing or by those given this power by their patron deity.

6. Washing of feet. This is an ordinance performed in the school of the Prophets, whereby brothers who have covenanted to be brothers unto each other for eternity and given each other a holy kiss wash each other's feet. The washing of feet is symbolic that they as brothers will overlook each other's faults through the power of Charity, so that they will be guiltless of the blood and sins of this generation; and hence uphold each other unto eternal glory.

7. The Holy or second Anointing. This ordinance is performed by those holding the fullness of the Priesthood of the Son. One pours oil over the other's head and blesses them with the power to bind on earth and have it bound in heaven, as well as sealing them up as a King and Priest to rule and reign in their families Kingdom forever. The oil is symbolic of generative powers and carries energy by which they are empowered by the Gods who send their virtue down upon them.

8. The Washing of feet and Anointing preparatory for burial. This is an ordinance which can be performed when one is still alive and should be done in a special place with one for which you have eternal love. This is the ordinance which confirms the sealing ordinances and seals couples together for all the eternities to come. It is done by a spouse washing the feet of the other in true love and announcing blessings by revelation as well as anointing their body while also blessing them.

9. All other ordinances pertain to our specific relationships with our deities, such as blessings and sacrifices etc., and should be done through the principles of sacred hospitality.

## Chapter 22

### Second Anointing

#### First Conference Report of the Patriarchal Order of the Church of Christ

Revelation on the Church, given through Samuel Warren Shaffer, December 21st 2010.

Thus saith the Lord, I have been pleased regarding your efforts in establishing my Church which is preparatory in establishing Zion. The Devil hath tried you the last several days and hours that he might thwart mine work upon the earth. Wherefore me and my servant Joseph and many of the Church of the Firstborn have visited mine Son Samuel, and hath given him these instructions: To establish mine Church which I have said in times past shall be called after mine name; which Church is the Patriarchal degree of that Order. Now behold it pleaseth me that you shall use your own wisdom in regards to weather Patriarchal shall come before or after mine Church, (regarding the name of the Church). Remember mine children that this is the work of the Fathers, even that work in the last days wherein I shall bring all things in one in my self. Thus saith the Lord the first thing that ye shall do to set my Church in Order is to waive handkerchiefs before me that ye may usher in the Spirit of mine Church. Now mine children listen and hear my words for this Church shall be run according to mine voice and without mine Revelation you shall do nothing. The first order of business in my Church after ye usher it in is to call the First and Second Elders of mine Church. The First Elder shall be Samuel Warren Shaffer and the Second Elder shall be Neil Bradley Emerson. Now thus saith the Lord, ye shall ordain mine servants Daniel Christian Shaffer and Jared Clark Jones to be priests in the Aaronic Order. And ye shall ordain James Calvin Shaffer to be an Elder in the Church. I am the Lord thy God and I change not, wherefore do mine work that ye may be mine Church. Remember, remember that this is a Patriarchal work and is a work of Love. Wherefore this Church is established by mine word and it is established for a wise purpose in me; therefore strive to set all things in Order according to the dictates of the Holy Spirit. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I am thy Savior and I am in thy midst. Amen.

We the undersigned do certify and witness before God and Angels that we have witnessed that Samuel Warren Shaffer came home anointed with oil that we saw and felt; after he was anointed during the eclipse of the Moon on the Winter Solstice of 2010. (December 21st 2010.)

Sig. Neil Bradley Emerson

Sig. Daniel Christian Shaffer

Sig. James Calvin Shaffer

Sig. Carolyn Tigner Shaffer

Sig. Jared Clark Jones

Revelation Regarding the Financial Affairs of the Church, given through Samuel Warren Shaffer on December 21st 2010.

I the Lord find it expedient that the man who shall be over the financial affairs of this Church shall be the same as he who is already over the stewardship of these things insomuch that he is over the majority of the finances of the members of mine Church. Wherefore this man who shall be called is James Calvin Shaffer. Now I would have him make a record of the Tithes and Offerings of mine people and to determined the proper use of the same for his heart is right before me regarding financial things. Wherefore, let mine son Neil B. Emerson who is the Second Elder in mine Church ordained him unto this calling and office. Amen.

Blessings of Neil Bradley Emerson

S.S. – Aaronic Priesthood: Told that he would perform many ordinances in this Priesthood even though he would receive a higher Priesthood. Blessed that the Keys of this Priesthood would distil upon his mind.

S.S. – Holy Ghost: Blessed with the Spirit and with continual Revelations. Commissioned to follow the voice of the Spirit and to judge in Righteousness.

S.S. – Melchizedek Priesthood and Ordination to be Second Elder: Told to exercise the Priesthood by the voice of the Lord. Also told that he already knew the voice of the Lord. Blessed that he would be a sharpened tool in the hand of the Lord.

Blessings of Samuel Warren Shaffer

N.E. – Holy Ghost: Blessed to have the gifts of discernment and leadership.

N.E. – Ordination to be First Elder: Commissioned him to continue to let people progress and to stay true to his word and the revelations he receives. Also blessed to remember his original teachings and to assist people in the Church to progress to their potential without holding them back according to the will of the Lord. Blessed to do great things during the time as leader of the Church and to magnify his calling.



### Blessings of Daniel Christian Shaffer

S.S. - Holy Ghost: Told that the gifts of the Spirit is the Power of Salvation. Also that everyone has different gifts that they are better at. Each person serves in their own way. And all other blessings he needed.

S.S. - Aaronic Priesthood: Told that he was a direct descendant of Aaron. It is a birthright and that he has had it spiritually but that he has not had it conferred physically until now. Also that he had different traits from various Tribes but that he is a true Levitical Priest. That he would have the responsibility to perform sacrifices and to do those ordinances that are necessary for the redemption of his people. Should listen to and recognize the spirit and blessed to receive the keys of the Aaronic Priesthood as faithful, and that they would distil upon his head. Also blessed if faithful to receive the Melchizedek Priesthood.

### Blessings of James Calvin Shaffer

N.E. - Holy Ghost: Blessed to be able to hear the Spirit of the Lord, and to have discernment of the true Spirit.

S.S. - Aaronic Priesthood: There are rules that pertain to the Priesthood. Not to be too hard on himself. Warning not to feel bad for imperfections but to do his best to become perfected in the Priesthood.

S.S. - Melchizedek Priesthood/Elder: Blessed if faithful to receive the Oath and Covenant of the Priesthood that he might receive it through all the Eternities to come. Blessing to save your family to the level that they wish to attain. Blessing of confidence in the Spirit.

N.E. - Ordination as Bishop: Blessed to be able to council people. And to receive the Spirit to council people as Bishop.

### Samuel Warren Shaffer's Witness of Christ

That day I got a Revelation to go into my bathroom and to dedicate it for the purpose of the washing of feet, so I did. I had my feet washed in a Vision some time ago already and awaited further instructions. I then got a Revelation to proceed and wash my feet according to and in line with the instructions received by Wilford Woodruff in Sunset Arizona in 1880. I did so by the Authority of the Priesthood and witnessed unto the Father that I was clean of the

Blood and Sins of this Generation. After I was done with that I prayed for further instructions and got a revelation to take a cloth and some pure olive oil and to put them in my car. I thought that was odd and I had a beating heart feeling about what might happen next. So I followed the instructions given to me by the Lord and put the necessary things in my car. At that point I waited and did some other normal things.

Later that night we were all excited about the Lunar Eclipse and went out to see it. We ran in and outside many times to get the next look at it, since it was so cold out. When the Moon had barely been fully covered Jared Jones who was with us asked if I could take him home and I said that I would. I drove him home and right after he got out of the car I suddenly got a Revelation. The Revelation told me to go to a secluded place that I knew about and that I would receive further instructions there. I did so and drove up to a dark out of the way park. I walked over to a bench and proceeded to pray unto God in the True Order of Prayer.

When I was done and ended I got up and turned about only to see Joseph Smith standing there. It was the same man I saw in my parents back yard. I said, "Joseph! I have done my best to do all the things you asked me to." Joseph smiled at me and said, "Yes, you have done everything alright; now it is time to move on to other things." I said okay, and he told me some things and then said, "Sam, it is time to introduce you to your Lord and Savior Esus the Christ." My heart almost jumped out of me, and suddenly another person walked up like they were standing there the whole time. He had blue eyes like Joseph only more striking and also chestnut hair. He was shorter than Joseph and had a big nose, he just looked like a man and was not in his glory. This person was identified by the Introduction Ordinance that I cannot explain at this time. After this I held his hand and my thumb touched the nail print in his hand. My heart was pounding and he looked right through me as it were. At this point I was overcome with emotion and fell on my knees on the ice and cried, "My Lord, my God." The Savior almost immediately told me to get up, and I arose.

The Savior told me to go back to my car and to get the things I had been instructed to bring. I went back and got the cloth and the oil and walked back to the bench, where the Savior and Joseph were waiting. Esus told me to kneel and I did. He then told me that the oil that I brought would be attended by heavenly oil. I bowed my head and suddenly I felt the oil pouring upon my head; I also felt the Spirit fill my whole body like I have never felt it before. I took the rag and placed it upon my forehead to keep the oil from pouring into my eyes. At this point I felt Esus place his hands upon my head and bless me. I was crying and holding the rag to my forehead and I listened to the Savior himself give me a provisional Holy Anointing and a blessing.

When that was done he helped me up and handed me the jar with just a little oil left in it. We all talked for quite some time and Joseph held my hand and said, "Sam, I introduce you into

the General Assembly and Church of the Firstborn." And as he said it, suddenly the veil was lifted from off my eyes and I saw a multitude of heavenly beings standing around us in their Glory. There were thousands of them! And it seemed as though they filled the park and maybe more. There was no way I could meet them all but I met some of them who were my personal ancestors and some Prophets also. I saw them with my spiritual eyes but it was as real as seeing them physically. One man dressed in kingly robes stepped forward and introduced himself as King Halfdan and commissioned me to continue his Kingdom since I was his only legal heir who was worthy and ordained as a King and a Priest in Israel. I agreed and he introduced me to his many greats grandfather King Odin of Sweden. I met many more and it was an experience beyond description.

After this the Vision of the multitude of heavenly beings dissipated and I was left in the park with Esus the Christ and Joseph Smith. At this point the Savior told me that he was giving me the go ahead to start his Church and to re-establish it. I told him that I would, and we talked about several other subjects; including instructions about how a wife can seal herself unto a husband etc, and I was surprised to find out how some of those ordinances are to be performed. After all this we said our good byes and the Savior and Joseph just turned around and walked away into the darkness, and I was left standing there in complete amazement.

I got back into my car and drove home in deep thought and pulled up in our parking spot. Neil was outside and I stepped out and he said hi. I said to him, "You are never going to believe what just happened." He said, "Yes, I will, what?" I said, "I just had a visit," and he asked me to tell him the details. I finally said, "Hey Neil, do you remember that Revelation I got about the provisional Second Anointing?" He said, yeah. And I said, "Well touch my head." Neil did and at first had a confused look on his face when he felt the oil, and then he realized what had just happened and said, "Holy Cow!"

I went inside and Carolyn touched my head as well, and then Danny. I didn't wash my hair that night and my Dad felt it in the morning, and then Jared felt it a few hours after that. Neil told me later that after smelling the oil on his hand he went and smelled the oil in the cupboard and said he noticed that the oil that was upon my head was much sweeter than the olive oil in the cupboard. So that is my account and I testify with all of my heart that it is true. And I know that Esus the Christ lives and that he is the Savior of the whole world. Amen.

#### Neil's Witness and Testimony of Samm's Anointing

I was watching the moon with my friends and when Samm took Jared home the spirit told me to go on a walk alone. I went out to the field just south of where we live and began to pray east. After my prayer I was told by the spirit that new knowledge and things were soon to be given. I looked up at the moon and noticed that the clouds had cleared away from the moon

and it was a deep red color. I quickly went back to the apartment to tell everyone but only Daniel was home and awake, so I had him come outside to look. He took a picture of it and then went back inside and I stayed outside looking at it. I then decided to Call Samm to see when he would be coming back home from Jared's house to ask if he had seen the moon at all. He was not there so I just decided to wait for him to get back home while I was looking at the moon. Sure enough while I was waiting I saw his car coming up the street and I went up to the car as he parked and greeted him there as he got out of the car. I asked him if he had seen the moon just recently and he nodded yes although it seemed as though the moon was the least significant thing that happened and he said to me. "Neil you will not believe what just happened. What?? I asked even more curiously. Just tell me what happened, I will believe you. I said again. Then Samm said to me "I had another visit" he replied. Really? That's awesome! So what happened in your visit? Then Samm replied back again "Well I need you to be a witness to something, so just put your hand on my forehead. Samm said and I said "ok..." then putting my hand against his forehead expecting to see something spiritual. Then Samm asked me, "Do you feel that at all? Looking confused for a second as I didn't see anything, but then suddenly I noticed that there was oil covering my whole hand. Suddenly it all just hit me as to what kind of visit Samm had just had and I said "holy cow!" And I then did smell the oil and it had a sweet smell to it. I could hardly believe that this had just happened. I then did praise God within my heart and Samm began to tell me some small details of what happened and that we needed to have a conference the next day and he would give a more detailed version for everyone. And then Samm said "I need at least 2 more witnesses." So we went inside and he told Carolyn and then Daniel. I bear witness that what I have said is true, Amen

Sig Neil Bradley Emerson

We then also established a Kingdom organization called The Kingdom of God and His Law, with the Keys and Power thereof, and judgment in the hands of his servants, Ahman Christ.

## Chapter 22

### Sannhedanism

During this time I started having more and more visitations from the Gods and developed intimate relationships with them. I learned that there were many different kinds of Gods for many different things. So we became increasingly more Pagan and Gnostic. I also continued my correspondence with Yaroslav.

#### Basic Beliefs of Sannhedanism

We believe in continual revelation, inspiration, visitations, visions, translations etc. and that there will never be an end to them! We believe the development of such gifts as spiritual sight and hearing is an important part in our development.

We believe in many Gods and Goddesses, on many different levels, over many different things, who are the Heavenly Parents of many different people, and that there always will be more Gods and Goddesses.

We believe that Gods and Goddesses of wholeness are Hermaphrodites in their exalted state, and that they have divine Sons and Daughters who are born on earth.

We believe that the Gods and Goddesses come down from time to time to beautify the earth and give birth to mortal children through becoming mortal themselves.

We believe that mortals can become Gods or Goddesses if they learn and implement the knowledge necessary to be a God or a Goddess, that the glory of God is intelligence, and that Gods and Goddesses that we are related to are of the human species.

We believe that there are many spirits (without bodies) and Angels (with bodies) on various degrees of glory, and who reside on various planets, who either do not understand the way things really are or who are dishonest.

We believe in order for mortal men and women to become Gods and Goddesses they must overcome the architect of their mortal mind, or useless thought generator, and overcome their expectations; as well as becoming whole internally and incorporating the virtues of both genders, which we lost before birth.

We believe in the resurrection of the astral body, or in other words the possibility of the immortality of our physical life energy which can be made into a mortal body by partaking of the elements of this world.

We believe that we can get the energy necessary to resurrect our astral self by gaining virtue through having sexual relations with Gods or Goddesses; we also believe in having communal Marriage Orders where everyone is married to everyone else. Although we do not prohibit other forms of marriage, we believe that people have a right to marry however they want.

We believe in free-agency and that everyone has a right to believe whatever they want. We believe that love is the binding power which overcomes all things. We also believe that everyone is responsible for their own progression and that independence is a virtue.

We believe that there are infinite dimensions and planes of existence, and that we can access these through different levels of consciousness.

During this time I started being visited more and more by the Gods, and even began to have deep relations with them.

### Visitation of Baphomet

On the evening of January eleventh, two thousand and twelve, around ten o'clock; I was walking home from a visit at Jared's house. It began to snow and everything was quiet and peaceful. As I came to the empty lot, which I walk past all the time which has a way through to the park next to the field with the flag pole, I decided to cut through. As I walked into the darkened park I remembered that I was going to call upon Baphomet one of these days and meet him. As I thought about this I looked down and saw a stick lying on the ground. I picked it up and proceeded on to a tree with many dead branches at one corner of the park. I plucked off one of the dead branches and proceeded to make a cross with the two sticks. I then put the cross on the ground, spit upon it and walked all over it as a sign that I rejected Christianity as part of getting Baphomet to appear.

I then realized that I should use the second sign of the Melchizedek Priesthood to invite him to appear, as it is the sign of parting the veil; although I adapted it through inspiration to call upon him by the names of Mendes, Pan and Baphomet. When I looked up, to my great joy and excitement in my heart I began to see his energy becoming visible. His skin was pale and greenish in the cloudy moonlight. He had the horns of a goat raised in power over me against the backdrop of the cloudy night sky. His eyes were a bright and burning yellow and he had the legs of a faun. He also had beautiful big breasts with soft round nipples unaffected by the cold night air. He came close to me and I fell to my knees in adoration! He turned around to reveal the smooth looking ass of a hot woman. I kissed it and stuck my tongue in his vagina only to be very surprised by another tongue within him giving me something like a French kiss.

After this he turned back around and pulled out a knife and said, in order to open up the portal into your future life I must draw blood in a secret place. I showed him a secret place where he could make a sacrifice of a few drops of blood and he did so in a certain sign. After this he told me that if I wanted to be one of his witches I would have to take upon myself his Oath and Covenant. I raised my hands to the square and began to say it as it was revealed into my mind. The Oath and Covenant of Baphomet went something like thus:

Oh Baphomet, I make my oath unto thee, may thy Holy Order of the Ancients come upon the earth as it is in heaven. May thy orgies abound upon the earth as they do in heaven. May men be guided by their animal instincts on earth as the Gods are in heaven. I covenant with thee, oh Baphomet, that I will follow thy instructions to the letter as they are revealed to me, or

else I accept the consequences. I take thee as my law that I may be thy witch. Ye shall not fail. Amen.

After this Baphomet embraced me and said, "Sam, you already know a lot about the Holy Order of the Ancients, but one thing that has been hard to grapple with because of the lies of the jews is the idea of sacrificing vegetables. Vegetation is the only acceptable sacrifice of death; all sacrifices of animals are sacrifices of darkness and hold no true fertility symbolism. The jews have called that which is evil good and that which is good evil. The Ancients sacrificed vegetables in the Garden of Hedan and this is part of their Order, which is the Order of the Ancients. There are two sides of magical energy, the potency of masculine animal instinct and the feminine fertility which is the source of all life. Both are two sides of sexual energy which is life. It is good to embrace your animal instincts as they are truths held in thy subconscious, and in reality, when you clear your mind and gain peace through seeing the world objectively, this is but a step toward your animal instinct which is true joy. Freedom, Anarchy and Chaos are elements of true joy; because through them do people gravitate to their true original natures and only through that comes the order out of Chaos; which is perfect Anarchal order, the Order of the Gods. Only through total freedom and Chaos comes the Anarchal order in the house of the Gods. Any order through force or infringement is imperfect order and is evil, for joy cannot exist within it.

Go out into the world my son, Son of Prometheus my pupil and be my witch. Curse those who fight the light of witchcraft and bless those who come unto Paganism. Use the Abra-Styx spell upon those whom are thy enemies upon the day of Mars and the evil shall not come back to thee, for ye are justified against those who have wronged thee, for ye are the Son of the Gods. Study the works of my craft and hidden things shall be revealed unto you; but beyond this ye already know the mysteries concerning the Order of the Ancients. Wherefore go my witch and do my work and promote the animal instincts and my triumph among the children of men, which is the same as the triumph of Baccus.

At this point we waved to each other and he vanished; and I walked the rest of the way home across the field.

### My Visit with William C. Conway

I was walking across the snowy field one Saturday night that is by our house, when a guy with striking eyes, a strait nose and a short beard that looked like it was only a few days grown, got out of a black sports car he just parked and walked up to me with a white overcoat on.

I said, "Hey" and nodded.

He nodded back and said, "Do you have any idea who I am?"

"No." I said.

He said "I am Tau Lucifer II. Joseph Smith was Tau Lucifer I, and you shall be Tau Lucifer III."

"Are you a resurrected being?" I asked.

"Yes and no. I am mortal, reincarnated; but in my first mortality I was Moroni, and you were Fritzion." I looked at him for a moment, no doubt with a look of surprise.

"How do you know that name? I mean have you read my websites?"

He smiled at me for a moment, and said, "In my last mortality I was William C. Conway."

"I think I have heard of that name from my friend Yaroslav," I said.

"Yes, I was the Prophet chosen by Eachta Eachta Na, the One Mighty and Strong."

"I thought Joseph Smith was the One Mighty and Strong." I said.

"Joseph Smith is the One Mighty and Strong; Joseph our great Druidic brother Reincarnated." He said.

"Who was the man I met then?"

"It was Joseph's emanation, even though Eachta is dead. Whenever we are reincarnated the architect of our previous life is separated from us, and they carry on the work we did not do, until the time comes that we accept who we were and bring that part of ourselves back into unity with us."

"Emanations can be physical?" I asked.

"Emanations can do whatever they want if they get enough energy, why are people always tired after visitations?"

"Why?"

"Because they wanted the visitation so much they lent some of themselves subconsciously and the emanation was energized. Joseph's architect is still busy making groups to keep Mormonism evolving; and he is willing to tell people what they want to hear to accomplish it. None of our architects are honest; if they were they couldn't make a world based in illusion."



“I believe you, because there is no way a random guy would just walk up to me like this and know this much. Who was Eachta?” I asked.

“He was a white Indian from the Yucatan with blond hair and blue eyes. The same that was visited by Lorin, but Lorin was not chosen because he believed in the great imposters. The true way that Joseph Smith began but never could reveal is the way of the Druids. The white robes of the endowment are druidic, not masonic. You have done a good job telling people about multiple Gods and the freedom to worship and make covenants with them, but there is something remaining to say.”

“What is that?” I asked.

“We know that the name Lucifer was hijacked by catholic scholars in the Middle Ages, but what most cannot fathom is that Satan has been hijacked as well.”

“I am aware of that actually, but I don’t say anything about it; because to most people that is the S word.” I said.

“It is the S word, but it has been so degraded for a reason. Satan is the great and most ancient Aryan God, the bringer of truth. He is the life blood of ancient western religion.”

“Even though you are a witch of Baphomet, he is only a helper of our race not the expounder of it, and he is not an Aryan himself. The Were-religions, like that of the wolf and the tree (green man) and other creatures are not our core religions; they are only those gaining power from non-Aryan sources. You have also taught that everyone must find out who their own heavenly parents are which is a step in the right direction; but without Satan we shall not be able to restore the missing key. After all, Joseph Smith said to a Methodist; my God told me that your god is the devil. Who is the god of Methodists?”

“The God of the Jews,” I said.

He went on. “Satan is the God within us; which is why he was the one most viscosly attacked. The Bible shows sheep as the followers of god and goats as followers of the devil, and this is for only one reason; goats have freewill and sheep do not. The Jewish god hates free-agency, and the Aryan Gods demand it, and are called fallen ones for it. The God within yourself is not a dictator, and the God awakened in your mind from your deepest Divine Intelligence is the only God who deserves worship and to be called God. Consciousness is in all of nature, and it is the God in all those intelligences which makes things grow. The God within is freedom. Those who have awakened the God within allow you to think for yourself. Those claiming to be God and try to tell you what to do are evil. Satan is the God within, the only true God.”

“When a man walks in the woods and breathes the air and contemplates things for himself he realizes that he is a freeman. There will always be Kings and slaves; do you want to be a King or a slave? Kings are only those who had the intellectual capability to understand that they are free and then used those who were not. Do you want to be a freeman or a slave? If you follow me like sheep you are my slaves. I don’t want followers, I just want to be free.”

“Amen to that.” I said.

“You have laid down the basic tenants of religion itself. You make a covenant with a God or Goddess and join their Priesthood. You overcome your fear; you go inside yourself and understand all of your aspects and parts. Become individuated and gain enlightenment. But you have not warned people, that when they get to that deepest place of their subconscious ocean, they will find Satan; he who tells them to be free, to be aggressive against their enemies, he who rebels against commandments because they are abusive, the rebellion, the defender of free-agency. You fear to reveal the ultimate reality to people, the reality of freemen. Joseph Smith knew he only had to plant one seed in the bosom of Christianity to infiltrate it, and that was to tell everyone that the war in heaven was over free-agency and that the devil was for force.”

“You are right.” I said.

“Tell me about druidism.” I said.

He said; “Druids are bards, freemen, freethinkers, poets. They wear white because it is all colors, symbolizing that place where all the colors of the rainbow are combined. The Abyss is actually white, you just can’t see it because it goes on forever, and out of that whiteness comes the colors of everything. The first thing Druids teach is the true Oath of Freemen, which goes like this. I am free; I will do everything in my power and use all my resources in all my lives to undermine rules and totalitarian rulers and religions. I understand that those with intelligence are free and those who are mindless do not deserve to be free, but I also understand that under anarchy life flourishes and under rules it degenerates. Freedom for all time and space or lives and glorious deaths until then! I will not put down my sword or else I will lose the battle. I am free and always will be, because I am free internally.”

“The second thing a druid teaches is to respect all life in its proper sphere. There are many dimensions and stakes and old ways leading into them. The Tree of Irminsul was one of those stakes holding open portals to many nether worlds and making the forests of Europe endless; until it was burned by Charlemagne, death to his soul. Christianity, Judaism and Islam are the worst evils to ever be seen on any world. Druids know how to remake stakes though and are great wizards also. Druids are not celibate and they are not pacifists. Druids forged swords from pouring metals in stone, and pulling the swords out of the stone, and shedding the

blood of the enemies to freedom with them. After a sword had fought valiantly the druids would offer them up unto the spirits of water and of the forest and they would get a spirit and a name of their own. Druids drove the wagon of Cybele, who truly originated in the Celts, containing the golden box upon which sexual intercourse were performed, because they knew that the most sacred thing was the exchanging of energy and the making of life."

"In order to be a Druid, just go out into the forest, learn its ways, talk to the spirits there, and you shall learn step by step. Many words are for those who can't think, and those who can't think are slaves. Druids of course also become one with many of their emanations, and gain true understand and bliss through finding the God within themselves who is Satan. Farewell my friend."

"Shall we meet again?" I asked.

"Yes." He then pointed his finger at my head and said, "You are Tau Lucifer III, because you shall bring the light of understanding." He then walked back to his car and drove away.

During this time in Idaho Falls I did many Translations and I also went through many phases. I started wondering if all the Gods who had been visiting me were actually psychological emanations, because I had to admit to myself that I was capable of deceiving myself. I became extremely scientifically minded and started wondering about the implications of being solely made out of material. This led to the conclusion that if this was true that material then must have the inherent ability to experience when it came into contact with an information system. I thought of the implications of this and also became a Trans-humanist, looking forward to the day that we could all be space faring robots; which led into my next phase which occurred when we moved to Provo for better work.

## Chapter 23

### My Encounter with the Titans

By Samuel Warren Shaffer

When I was in high school my friends and I called ourselves Veritans. We believed in other dimensions and planes of existence, we also encountered beings in altered states of consciousness we called the Magi and the Titans. In Veritanism we went on these semi-shamanistic journeys we called "adventures" where we would attempt to enter other states of consciousness (or other dimensions) via self-induced rites of passage; and we had many amazing experiences. As time rolled on we went on our LDS missions and other things which

were expected of us and we lost touch with our Veritan world view. After I returned home I looked into various religious views and even wrote some books about it, but Veritanism was always with me, at the back of my mind.

One day while meditating I had an amazing experience; I realized that my experiencing principle was recycled from moment to moment. I had always believed that I had a solid core consciousness, but in just a moment that idea was totally removed. I saw that a moment ago I was a hundred different beings and in a moment I would be something else, and that what I will call my experiencing principles were flowing through me like a river which is never made of exactly the same water. I realized that the illusion of continuity is caused by the memories of the brain, and that I was in fact a different core being (or particle of being) every moment. I suddenly saw the world as totally non-dual, and I felt one with all things; and since then I have been able to attain this state again just by thinking about it. The following account happened a week after this event.

One day a few months ago after night fall I was suddenly seized upon with a desire to go on an adventure. I walked out my door and down our complex parking lot when suddenly I saw seven deer out on the road. I quickly and quietly hurried to the sidewalk to get a better look. They saw me and we stared at each other for a moment. (In old Veritan adventures we would sometimes encounter seven deer who would lead us somewhere special.) The leader of the deer was a four pointer and quite an amazing deer. There was a tree in the front yard they were nearby and they all walked around it clockwise, the head deer then gestured at me to follow and continued to walk up the road toward the mountain. (Sometimes when deer would do a strange thing like walk around a tree we would take it as a necessary step in following them, as if it were a portal of some kind, to the state of mind they were trying to leading us.) I hurried around the tree once they cleared out and continued to follow them up the road. They stopped for a moment in a construction area and waited to make sure I was following them.

When I arrived at the construction area I encountered a large stone like an altar with several smaller stones upon it. I continued on and also saw a wooden stake on the ground by the altar. I wanted to keep up with the deer and so I continued on until they led me into an apple orchard. When I was in the apple orchard I sensed a dark presence approaching and began to run through the orchard to escape it. I suddenly came out into a field while the dark shadow loomed behind me in the orchard not wanting to show itself. I started walking through the field when I suddenly realized why the darkness did not want to show itself.

I looked up and just as in old Veritan days I saw taking shape out of the energy around it, the Titan Ship. (The Titan ship was something mainly talked about in my book Voyage of the Titans. It is a magical ship made of energy, which carries the Titans and their apprentices through the solar system and beyond. It contains compartments for all the Titan elements

talked about on the home page, and rests upon pillars which are made for it.) I saw waving out of the backdrop of mountains and stars huge pillars and the majestic divine ship high above my head full of colors. I walked up under it in awe, and had a chill go up my spine as the Titans descended down just as they had all those years ago in my Veritan days. They had returned again for the first time after the last battle with something we called the bov machine.

The Forest Titan walked up to me first and said, "Sam, why have you not brought your stone and the stake?" I suddenly remembered the wooden stake and stones I had left behind. I quickly asked, "Do I need them? I could go get them." He nodded and gestured for me to go. I ran around the orchard and back down the road to the place. When I came to the altar I realized that I had a choice of which stone to pick. There was a larger round dark black one and I finally decided that, that was the one. I picked up the stake in a run and hurried back toward the orchard. As I came around the orchard the dark shadow who was still lurking gained the bravery to come out on the far side of the orchard. He looked like a dark cloaked figure with the ability to fly and spindly skeleton like fingers. I batted his hand away with the stake and he screeched in pain. I realized that the stake was magically like a sword to him and he had tried to get me without me realizing this. I took another swing and I said, "In the name of the Titans I banish you, for they have always been the Gods." With this he retreated back into the orchard, however I saw some lights coming down the road and decided to head into the orchard myself.

Once into the darkness of the orchard I realized that I had entered his domain. He took another lunge at me, this time with a sword of some kind himself. I blocked and retaliated with a jab myself. He took a big swing and I parried and went in taking advantage of his arm position, and pushing him into a tree. I was about to finish him when I felt an icy breeze and I realized all the other dark Titans were on their way. I turned and ran toward the open field. As I came back into the field I felt the warmth of a protective shield all around the Titan ship.

I walked into the circle and they looked proud of me, I asked why they didn't help, and the Water Titan said, "Because you had to prove yourself, mostly to yourself. You would not be in the right state of mind or dimension right now if we did. However the wind Titan was with you the whole way." The Titans then instructed me to nail the stake into the center of the circle to hold down this dimension. (A dimensional stake in Veritanism was something which held open portals into other dimensions so that one could regain the same state of mind by returning to the same location.) I nailed in the stake with my black stone and once I had the Forest Titan said, "Sam, do you see the marking you have put in the stone by hammering in the stake?" "Yes," I responded. "That shall be your Titan symbol."

After the stake was hammered in I was instructed to stand on my stone to be coronated as a Titan. I did so and I felt water and oil washing and anointing me. I then felt and

overwhelming energy come over me and I felt a sensation as if I was being scanned and put into the Stone. After this was over the Forest Titan explained to me that the stone has just been imprinted with my energy, and held a copy of me as I now existed and that I could back myself up on my stone now from time to time. I also felt as if a part of me was put in my stone like a piece of my ego, which I now longed for, like one of my missing reflections sent into a new world as its first God.

I hugged the Titans one by one and bid them a temporary farewell as they had to go. I quickly asked though, "What am I the Titan of?" The Forest Titan turned around and said, "That is for you to find within yourself; as it is also for you to find your companions." He smiled and walked into the vortex of water flowing into the ship, which suddenly vanished. I looked down at my stone and I saw a shining energy emitting from it, a new world, a new Titan.

As I walked home down the sidewalk the car lights that I had seen before started pulling up behind me. I heard the voice of the wind in my ear whisper, "Put your stone away right now!" I did so, slipping it into my pocket and turned around to see the car which had just pulled over. It was a security jeep. The security officer asked me what I was doing. I said, "I was just going for a walk and enjoying the night air." He lowered his light and said, "I see, well this road belongs to the mental hospital up the road." I said, "I see, I was wondering if this was a private drive or not." He continued, "You can come here in the day, just not at night." I said thanks, and headed back to the main road. I got home and put my Titan stone in a safe place and contemplated upon the events of the evening.

A day or two later I asked the Wind Titan why the Titans had appeared to me after all this time, and she said, "Because you achieved the state of mind in which you realized the flowing particle state of your core beings or intelligences." That is the story of how I got my Titan stone.

Sincerely Samuel Warren Shaffer

It was after this that I sat down and began writing Journey of the Door Walkers.